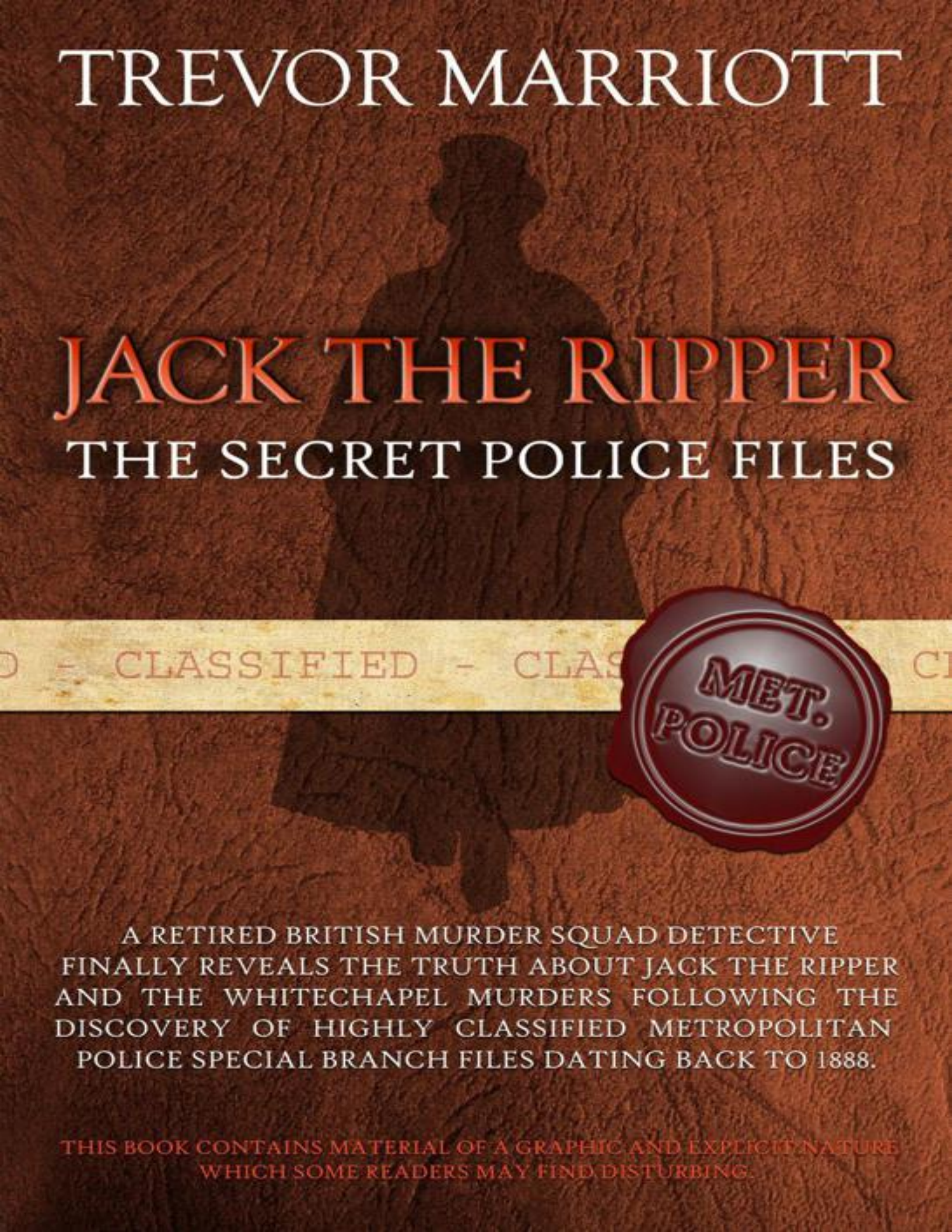
TREVOR MARRIOTT

JACK THE RIPPER

THE SECRET POLICE FILES



A RETIRED BRITISH MURDER SQUAD DETECTIVE FINALLY REVEALS THE TRUTH ABOUT JACK THE RIPPER AND THE WHITECHAPEL MURDERS FOLLOWING THE DISCOVERY OF HIGHLY CLASSIFIED METROPOLITAN POLICE SPECIAL BRANCH FILES DATING BACK TO 1888.

THIS BOOK CONTAINS MATERIAL OF A GRAPHIC AND EXPLICIT NATURE WHICH SOME READERS MAY FIND DISTURBING.

“JACK THE RIPPER”

“THE SECRET POLICE FILES”

Written by

TREVOR MARRIOTT

Copyright © 2013 by Trevor Marriott
All rights reserved.
No part of this book may be reproduced in any form or by any electronic or mechanical means including information storage and retrieval systems, without permission in writing from the author. The only exception is by a reviewer, who may quote short excerpts in a review.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Trevor Marriott is a retired British police murder squad detective who joined the police service in 1970 and was soon promoted to the Criminal Investigation Department (CID), where he was involved in the investigation of numerous murders, as well as assisting in the investigation of other major crimes throughout his long and distinguished career. He is the author of "*Jack the Ripper: The 21st Century Investigation"* (2007*)* and "*The Evil Within"* (2013) – a comprehensive analysis of some the world's worst serial killers from around the world.

His most recent publication is a Victorian crime mystery novel, based on the Whitechapel murders titled "*Prey Time"* (2013).

To contact the author, to arrange press and media interviews, speaking engagements or any other personal appearances.

Website: www.trevormarriott.co.uk

E Mail: tmarriott_info@btinternet.com

Copyright Trevor Marriott 2013

First published 2013

All Rights Reserved

The content of this book covers the second part of my long and protracted investigation into the Whitechapel murders. For continuity purposes and in order to highlight the results of significant new lines of enquiry it has been necessary to use some of the original material from my first book "*Jack the Ripper: The 21st Century Investigation"* published in 2007.

“Jack the Ripper - The Secret Police Files”

CONTENTS

Chapter 1 Introduction
Chapter 2 Whitechapel 1888
Chapter 3 The Victims
Chapter 4 The Suspects
Chapter 5 The Aberconway Version
Chapter 6 The Swanson Marginalia
Chapter 7 Carl Feigenbaum
Chapter 8 The Medical Experts
Chapter 9 The Anarchist Theory
Chapter 10 The Secret Police Files
Chapter 11 Freedom of Information Hearing Part 1
Chapter 12 Informants
Chapter 13 Freedom of Information Hearing Part 2
Chapter 14 The Information Tribunal Decision
Chapter 15 New Suspects from the Register
Chapter 16 Police Officials in Later Years
Chapter 17 125th Anniversary Tour
Chapter 18 The Epilogue

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

Jack the Ripper: man or myth, fact or fiction? Whoever he was, up until now his identity has remained a mystery. The horrendous murders attributed to the unknown killer spread terror among the residents of London's East End and his nickname was known and feared the world over.

One hundred and twenty five years have passed since the Ripper's crimes were committed, yet the search for his identity has been ongoing. In fact the mystery had deepened so much that the truth about the murders has been totally obscured. Innumerable press stories, books, plays, films and even musicals have dramatised and distorted the facts, with the unfortunate result that the public have now accepted the fiction more readily than the facts, and the most worrying fact is that the public firmly believe what they have seen and read as being correct.

As a modern day British murder squad detective I had been interested in this case for many years but due to a heavy workload, I never had the time to study it in great detail. However in 2002 with more time at my disposal I decided to reinvestigate the murders. I felt that all the experience, knowledge and insight into the criminal mind I had gained by interviewing and talking to murderers, rapists and robbers would be invaluable in my attempt to view the murders not only through the eyes of an experienced investigator, but through the eyes of the killer. So I set out to conduct a 21st century cold-case investigation into this fascinating series of 19th century murders.

I looked closely at the murders themselves, the victims, and the suspects at the time, and both the evidence available at that time and the new evidence and new suspects that have emerged in the intervening years. I knew I would also need to analyse and assess all the new evidence recently put forward, with a view to either proving or disproving some of the accepted theories about the murders, which have been with us for many years. In doing so I hoped I might find something new that would unlock the mystery and lead me to the identity of Jack the Ripper.

It has been widely accepted that Jack the Ripper killed only five women all of whom were prostitutes. They have become known as the “canonical five”. However, my lengthy and protracted investigation revealed a total of eight women were in fact murdered. All were killed in similar circumstances and all the murders occurred in or near Whitechapel, East London, between August 7th 1888 and 13th February 1891, and all were prostitutes. All had their throats cut, and their bodies subjected to mutilations and in the case of two of the victims, it was suggested that the killer also removed vital organs, taking them away with him from the crime scenes. In addition, I discovered two other similar murders of prostitutes, which occurred in central London many years before the Whitechapel murders commenced. Both of these murders bore many comparable similarities to the later murders.

Further investigative work would cast a major doubt surrounding the removal of the organs from the victims at the crime scenes. I would later discover the existence of missing police files, which had never before been made public, which contained the names of new Ripper suspects never before previously discussed. I would also discover new photographic evidence, which could perhaps connect at least one of the Whitechapel murders to a series of similar murders, which took place in New York and Germany, following the cessation of the Whitechapel murders. It soon became apparent that the mystery was not a singular one but involved intrigue and false trails, with a number of mysteries within the mystery.

CHAPTER 2

WHITECHAPEL 1888

All the murders were committed in squalid poor areas, and all the victims were prostitutes. Many prostitutes in those days were forced to work the streets by gangs, who would inflict their own violence on these poor women if they did not conform and hand over the money they earned through prostitution. It is documented that in Whitechapel alone, at the time of the murders, there were in excess 1600 prostitutes actively working.

The population of the East End of London at the time was believed to have been around 900,000, of which 80,000 resided in Whitechapel. The "poor" made up about 8% of the population and consisted of men who worked as builders, market porters etc. earning what was described as a "meagre" but regular income of between 18 – 21 shillings a week. (Before decimalization in the UK, 20 shillings equalled 1 pound.)

The "very poor" totalled about 11 % of the population, and their income fell below the aforementioned level. The former struggled to make both ends meet, and the latter lived in a state of total poverty. 2% consisted of the lowest class and was made up of down-and-outs and the homeless. In one area alone it was documented there were approximately 146 registered lodging houses, with a number of beds exceeding 6,000. Some of the houses contained as few as four beds, whilst others had as many as 350. For those who could not afford lodgings there was no other option than to sleep on the streets and alleys, as some still do to this day.

CHAPTER 3

THE VICTIMS

MARTHA TABRAM

Martha Tabram was a plump, thirty–nine-year-old prostitute; she was stabbed to death in George Yard Buildings on 7th August 1888. On the evening of her death Tabram was seen with another prostitute “Pearly Poll” in various public houses in Whitechapel, and the last anyone saw of her was around 11.45pm; she was seen going into George Yard with a soldier, presumably to have sex. There were no more sightings of her before her body was found at 4.45am, on the stairs in George Yard Buildings. Her lower garments were in a state of disarray, suggesting intercourse may have taken place. She had been stabbed 39 times to her chestal area. One different sized stab wound was found to her abdomen, suggesting that perhaps her killer was armed with two knives. The police failed to identify her killer, and also failed to trace the identity of the soldier. Her murder remains unsolved. Some experts do not subscribe to the theory that she was a Ripper victim. However, in regard to the ferocity of the attack on her and the ferocity of the attacks on some of the later victims, she should not be discounted. Furthermore, this murder is referred to as one of the Whitechapel murders in various reports compiled by Chief Inspector Swanson who was put in overall charge of the investigation between August and December 1888.

MARY ANN NICHOLS

The second murder occurred on Friday August 31st the victim was Mary Ann Nichols, known as Polly, aged 43. She was found murdered in a narrow, cobbled street called Buck’s Row. Nichols was last seen alive around 2.30am and was found dead in the street at 3.45am. Witnesses who found her suggest she may have been clinging to life. If that was so, the killer was very lucky not to have been seen either committing the murder or making his escape.

She had been stabbed several times in the stomach and abdomen and her throat had been cut to the point that she was almost decapitated. Bruising found around the neck and throat suggests she may have possibly been strangled before having her throat cut. It was suggested that her killer used a long-bladed knife to inflict the wounds. There were no witnesses and no descriptions of anyone seen with Nichols before her death or at the spot where she was murdered. Her killer simply vanished unseen into the darkness.

As is required by English law an inquest took place into her death. The inquest opened on September 1st 1888 by Mr. Wynne E. Baxter, the coroner for South East Middlesex. I do not intend to publish the full details of that inquest but will set out the evidence given by the Police Surgeon, Dr. Rees Ralph Llewellyn. I will continue to include all the medical testimony from the various police surgeons again when discussing the deaths of later victims. This medical evidence would be a pivotal part of my investigation in proving or disproving some of the accepted theories, which have been a part of the mystery for over 125 years. I will also include other parts of witness testimony given during the inquests, which I deem to be relevant to my investigation.

Dr. Llewellyn arrived at the murder scene at 4.00am on August 31st. After only a brief examination of the body he pronounced Polly Nichols dead. He noted that there was a wine glass and a half of blood in the gutter at her side but claimed that he had no doubt that she had been killed where she lay. He failed to notice the abdominal wounds the killer had inflicted upon her, a glaring professional mistake.

In court he gave the following testimony:

“In the mortuary I saw that the abdomen was cut very extensively. I have this morning made a post-mortem examination of the body. I found it to be that of a female about forty or forty-five years. Five teeth were missing, and there was a slight laceration of the tongue. There was a bruise running along the lower part of the jaw on the right side of the face that might have been caused by a blow from a fist or pressure from a thumb. There was a circular bruise on the left side of the face, which also might have been inflicted by the pressure of the fingers. On the left side of the neck, about 1 in. below the jaw, there was an incision about 4 in. in length, and ran from

a point immediately below the ear. On the same side, but an inch below, and commencing about 1 in. in front of it, was a circular incision, which terminated at a point about 3 in. below the right jaw. That incision completely severed all the tissues down to the vertebrae.

"The large vessels of the neck on both sides were severed. The incision was about 8 in. in length. The cuts must have been caused by a long-bladed knife, moderately sharp, and used with great violence. No blood was found on the breast, either of the body or the clothes. There were no injuries about the body until just about the lower part of the abdomen. Two or three inches from the left side was a wound running in a jagged manner. The wound was a very deep one, and the tissues were cut through. There were several incisions running across the abdomen. There were three or four similar cuts running downwards, on the right side, all of which had been caused by a knife, which had been used violently and downwards. The injuries were from left to right and might have been done by a left-handed person. All the injuries had been caused by the same instrument."

I have also included other additional witness testimony from the inquest hearing, which I feel is relevant and the reasons will soon become apparent.

Detective Sergeant Enright of Scotland Yard, told the coroner that following the removal of the body to the workhouse mortuary, two workhouse officials had without permission stripped the body and the said clothes, which were lying in a heap in the mortuary yard. They consisted of a reddish-brown ulster, with seven large brass buttons, and a brown dress, which looked new. There were also a woollen and a flannel petticoat, belonging to the workhouse. Inspector Helson had cut out pieces marked 'P. R., Princes-road,' with a view to tracing the body.

Inspector John Spratling, J Division, Metropolitan Police stated that the clothes were fastened when he first saw the body.

Inspector Jos. Helson deposed that he first received information about the murder at 6.45am on Friday morning. He afterwards went to the mortuary, where he saw the body with the clothes still on it.

Dr Llewellyn recalled, he had re-examined the body and there was no part of the viscera missing…

Robert Mann, the keeper of the mortuary, said the police came to the workhouse, of which he was an inmate. He went, in consequence, to the mortuary at 5am. He saw the body placed there, and then locked the place up and kept the keys. After breakfast he and another inmate of the workhouse, undressed the woman.

A verdict of wilful murder by person or persons unknown was recorded. To this day her murder remains unsolved.

ANNIE CHAPMAN

The next victim was Annie Chapman 47, she was found dead in the backyard at 29, Hanbury Street on 8th September 1888. Her throat, like Mary Ann Nichols's, was dissevered deeply. She had been disembowelled and her uterus plus the fallopian tubes still attached, were found to be missing at the time the post-mortem was carried out. Her intestines had allegedly been placed over her right shoulder and other parts of her stomach were found outside the abdominal cavity on her left side.

It was also noted that some of her possessions were found near to a railing in the rear yard. I will comment on this issue before discussing the murder and the subsequent post-mortem and inquest.

The suggestion in recent times was that her possessions had been placed there by the killer and arranged as part of some ritualistic ceremony... These items were a small piece of coarse muslin, a small toothcomb, and a pocket comb in a paper case. I do not subscribe to this and would suggest there is a simple, less sinister explanation.

It is obvious that Chapman met her killer and they both went to the rear of 29, Hanbury Street to engage in some form of sexual activity. She was not carrying a handbag and would probably have had her possessions in the pocket of her dress or apron. On entering the rear yard and in order to engage in a sex act, which would have resulted in her lifting up her dress and apron, she could have simply taken out her own possessions and placed them on the floor so as to not lose them, intending to pick them up when she had finished and before leaving.

Chapman was allegedly last seen alive at around 5.30am, talking to a man near to where her body was found. The man was described as shabbily

dressed, over forty-years of age, with a dark complexion, possibly of foreign appearance. He was wearing a brown deerstalker hat and what is believed to have been a dark overcoat, although this evidence of identification like many other suspect sightings throughout the investigation is unsafe and should not be totally relied upon. Another witness who lived next door to 29, Hanbury Street would say that he heard noises in the rear yard of Hanbury Street at 5.40am. In fact Dr. Phillips, the police surgeon, would later suggest that her death could have occurred at around 4am.

The inquest to her death was opened on September 11th by the coroner Mr. Wynne Baxter, among the first witnesses called were two workmen who were called to the murder scene by John Davies a tenant of 29, Hanbury Street who initially found the body. The first witness was James Kent who testified as follows :

“I work for Mr. Bayley, 23A, Hanbury-street, and go there at six a.m. On Saturday I arrived about ten minutes past that hour. Our employer's gate was open, and there I waited for some other men. Davis, who lives two or three doors away, ran from his house into the road and cried, "Men, come here." James Green and I went together to 29, Hanbury-street, and on going through the passage, standing on the top of the back-door steps, I saw a woman lying in the yard between the steps and the partition between the yard and the next. Her head was near the house, but no part of the body was against the wall. The feet were lying towards the back of Bayley's premises. (Witness indicated the precise position upon a plan produced by the police officers.) Deceased's clothes were disarranged, and her apron was thrown over them. I did not go down the steps, but went outside and returned after Inspector Chandler had arrived. I could see that the woman was dead. She had some kind of handkerchief around her throat, which seemed soaked in blood. The face and hands were besmeared with blood, as if she had struggled. She appeared to have been on her back and fought with her hands to free herself. The hands were turned toward her throat. The legs were wide apart, and there were marks of blood upon them. The entrails were protruding, and were lying across her left side. I got a piece of canvas from the shop to throw over the body, and by that time a mob had assembled, and Inspector Chandler was in possession of the yard. The foreman gets to the shop at ten minutes to six every morning, and he was there before us.”

A further witness was Inspector Chandler from H Division Metropolitan Police the relevant part of his testimony is:

“On Saturday morning, at ten minutes past six, I was on duty in Commercial-street. At the corner of Hanbury-street I saw several men running. I beckoned to them. One of them said, "Another woman has been murdered." I at once went with him to 29, Hanbury-street, and through the passage into the yard. There was no one in the yard. I saw the body of a woman lying on the ground on her back. Her head was towards the back wall of the house, nearly two feet from the wall, at the bottom of the steps, but six or nine inches away from them. The face was turned to the right side, and the left arm was resting on the left breast. The right hand was lying down the right side. Deceased's legs were drawn up, and the clothing was above the knees. A portion of the intestines, still connected with the body, were lying above the right shoulder, with some pieces of skin. There were also some pieces of skin on the left shoulder. The body was lying parallel with the fencing dividing the two yards. I remained there and sent for the divisional surgeon, Mr. Phillips, and to the police station for the ambulance and for further assistance. When the constables arrived I cleared the passage of people, and saw that no one touched the body until the doctor arrived. I obtained some sacking to cover it before the arrival of the surgeon, who came at about half-past six o'clock, and he, having examined the body, and directed that it should be removed to the mortuary.”

Amongst other witnesses who were called was Sergeant Badham, H Division. He stated that he conveyed the body of the deceased to the mortuary on the ambulance.

Coroner: *Are you sure that you took every portion of the body away with you*?

Badham: *Yes.*

Coroner: *Where did you deposit the body?*

Badham: *In the shed, still on the ambulance. I remained with it until Inspector Chandler arrived. Detective-Sergeant Thicke viewed the body and I took down the description. There were present two women, who came to identify the body, and they described the clothing. They came from 35, Dorset-street.*

Coroner: *Who touched the clothing?*

Badham: *I did not see the women touch the clothing nor the body. I did not see Sergeant Thicke touch the body*.

Inspector Chandler, recalled:

"I reached the mortuary a few minutes after seven. The body did not appear to have been disturbed. He did not stay until the doctor arrived. Police-constable 376 H was left in charge, with the mortuary keeper. Robert Mann, the mortuary keeper and an inmate of the Whitechapel Union Workhouse, said he received the body at seven o'clock on Saturday morning. He remained at the mortuary until Dr. Phillips came. The door of the mortuary was locked except when two nurses from an infirmary came and undressed the body. No one else touched the corpse. He gave the key into the hands of the police.

Set out below is the medical evidence given by Dr. George Bagster Phillips the police surgeon, together with questions put to him during his testimony.

He first describes the body of Annie Chapman as he saw it at 6.30am in the backyard of the house at 29, Hanbury Street:

"The left arm was placed across the left breast. The legs were drawn up, the feet resting on the ground, and the knees turned outwards. The face was swollen and turned on the right side. The tongue protruded between the front teeth, but not beyond the lips. The tongue was evidently much swollen. The front teeth were perfect as far as the first molar, top and bottom and very fine teeth they were. The body was terribly mutilated... the stiffness of the limbs was not marked, but was evidently commencing. He noticed that the throat was dissevered deeply; that the incision through the skin was jagged and reached right round the neck... On the wooden paling between the yard in question and the next, smears of blood, corresponding to where the head of the deceased lay, were to be seen. These were about 14 inches from the ground, and immediately above the part where the blood from the neck lay.

He should say that the instrument used at the throat and abdomen was the same. It must have been a very sharp knife with a thin narrow blade,

and must have been at least 6 in. to 8 in. in length, probably longer. He should say that the injuries could not have been inflicted by a bayonet or a sword bayonet. They could have been done by such an instrument as a medical man used for post-mortem purposes, but the ordinary surgical cases might not contain such an instrument. Those used by the slaughtermen, well ground down, might have caused them. He thought the knives used by those in the leather trade would not be long enough in the blade. There were indications of anatomical knowledge... he should say that the deceased had been dead at least two hours, and probably more, when he first saw her; but it was right to mention that it was a fairly cool morning, and that the body would be more apt to cool rapidly from its having lost a great quantity of blood. There was no evidence... of a struggle having taken place. He was positive the deceased entered the yard alive... A handkerchief was round the throat of the deceased when he saw it early in the morning. He should say it was not tied on after the throat was cut."

He then gives further details following his post-mortem examination:

"Having received instructions soon after two o'clock on Saturday afternoon, I went to the labour yard of the Whitechapel Union for the purpose of further examining the body and making the usual post-mortem investigation. I was surprised to find that the body had been stripped and was lying ready on the table. It was under great disadvantage I made my examination. As on many occasions I have met with the same difficulty, I now raise my protest, as I have before, that members of my profession should be called upon to perform their duties under these inadequate circumstances…

"The body had been attended to since its removal to the mortuary, and probably partially washed. I noticed a bruise over the right temple. There was a bruise under the clavicle, and there were two distinct bruises, each the size of a man's thumb, on the fore part of the chest. The stiffness of the limbs was then well marked. The fingernails were turgid. There was an old scar of long-standing on the left of the frontal bone. On the left side the stiffness was more noticeable, and especially in the fingers, which were partly closed. There was an abrasion over the bend of the first joint of the ring finger, and there were distinct markings of a ring or rings – probably the latter. There were small sores on the fingers. The head being opened showed that the membranes of the brain were opaque and the veins loaded

with blood of a dark character. There was a large quantity of fluid between the membranes and the substance of the brain. The brain substance was unusually firm, and its cavities also contained a large amount of fluid. The throat had been severed. The incisions of the skin indicated that they had been made from the left side of the neck on a line with the angle of the jaw, carried entirely round and again in front of the neck, and ending at a point about midway between the jaw and the sternum or breast bone on the right hand. There were two distinct clean cuts on the body of the vertebrae on the left side of the spine. They were parallel to each other, and separated by about half an inch. The muscular structures between the side processes of bone of the vertebrae had an appearance as if an attempt had been made to separate the bones of the neck. There are various other mutilations of the body, but I am of the opinion that they occurred subsequently to the death of the woman and to the large escape of blood from the neck. [Phillips paused] I am entirely in your hands, sir, but is it necessary that I should describe the further mutilations? From what I have said I can state the cause of death."

Coroner: *The object of the inquiry is not only to ascertain the cause of death, but the means by which it occurred. Any mutilation, which took place, afterwards may suggest the character of the man who did it. Possibly you can give us the conclusions to which you have come respecting the instrument used.*

Dr. Phillips: *You don't wish for details. I think if it were possible to escape the details it would be advisable. The cause of death is visible from injuries I have described.*

Coroner: *You have kept a record of them?*

Dr. Phillips: *I have. From these appearances I am of the opinion that the breathing was interfered with previous to death, and that death arose from syncope, or failure of the heart's action, in consequence of the loss of blood caused by the severance of the throat.*

Coroner: *Was the instrument used at the throat the same as that used at the abdomen?*

Dr. Phillips: *Very probably. It must have been a very sharp knife, probably with a thin, narrow blade, and at least six to eight inches in length, and*

perhaps longer.

Coroner: *Is it possible that any instrument used by a military man, such as a bayonet, would have done it?*

Dr. Phillips: *No, it would not be a bayonet*.

Coroner: *Would it have been such an instrument as a medical man uses for post-mortem examinations?*

Dr. Phillips: *The ordinary post-mortem case perhaps does not contain such a weapon*.

Coroner*: Would any instrument that slaughterers employ have caused the injuries?*

Dr. Phillips: *Yes; well ground down*.

Coroner: *Would the knife of a cobbler or of any person in the leather trades have done?*

Dr. Phillips: *I think the knife used in those trades would not be long enough in the blade*.

Coroner: *Was there any anatomical knowledge displayed?*

Dr. Phillips*: I think there was. There were indications of it. My own impression is that the anatomical knowledge was only less displayed or indicated in consequence of haste. The person evidently was hindered from making a more complete dissection in consequence of the haste*.

Coroner: *Was the whole of the body there?*

Dr. Phillips: *No; the absent portions being from the abdomen*.

Coroner*: Are those portions such as would require anatomical knowledge to extract?*

Dr. Phillips: *I think the mode in which they were extracted did show some anatomical knowledge*.

Coroner: *You do not think they could have been lost accidentally in the transit of the body to the mortuary?*

Dr. Phillips: *I was not present at the transit. I carefully closed up the clothes of the woman. Some portions had been excised*.

Coroner: *How long had the deceased been dead when you saw her?*

Dr. Phillips: *I should say at least two hours, and probably more; but it is right to say that it was a fairly cold morning, and that the body would be more apt to cool rapidly from its having lost the greater portion of its blood*.

Coroner: *Was there any evidence of any struggle?*

Dr. Phillips: *No; not about the body of the woman*.

Coroner: *In your opinion did she enter the yard alive?*

Dr. Phillips: *I am positive of it. I made a thorough search of the passage, and I saw no trace of blood, which must have been visible had she been taken into the yard*.

Coroner: *Were any of these injuries self-inflicted?*

Dr. Phillips: *The injuries, which were the immediate cause of death, were not self-inflicted*.

Coroner: *Was the bruising you mentioned recent?*

Dr. Phillips: *The marks on the face were recent, especially about the chin and sides of the jaw. The bruise upon the temple and the bruises in front of the chest were of longer standing, probably of days. I am of opinion that the person who cut the deceased's throat took hold of her by the chin, and then commenced the incision from left to right*.

Coroner: *Could that be done so instantaneously that a person could not cry out?*

Dr. Phillips: *By pressure on the throat no doubt it would be possible*.

Foreman of the jury: *There would probably be suffocation*.

Coroner: *The thickening of the tongue would be one of the signs of suffocation?*

Dr. Phillips: *Yes. My impression is that she was partially strangled. (Witness added that the handkerchief produced was, when found amongst the*

clothing, saturated with blood. A similar article was round the throat of the deceased when he saw her early in the morning at Hanbury Street.)

Coroner: *It had not the appearance of having been tied on afterwards?*

Dr. Phillips: *No. Sarah Simonds, a resident nurse at the Whitechapel Infirmary, stated that, in company of the senior nurse, she went to the mortuary on Saturday, and found the body of the deceased on the ambulance in the yard. It was afterwards taken into the shed, and placed on the table. She was directed by Inspector Chandler to undress it, and she placed the clothes in a corner. She left the handkerchief round the neck. She was sure of this. They washed stains of blood from the body. It seemed to have run down from the throat. She found the pocket tied round the waist. The strings were not torn. There were no tears or cuts in the clothes*.

Foreman of the jury: *We are of opinion that the evidence the doctor on the last occasion wished to keep back should be heard. (*Several Jurymen: *Hear, hear*.)

Coroner*: I have carefully considered the matter and have never before heard of any evidence requested being kept back…*

Dr. Phillips: *I am of opinion that what I am about to describe took place after death, so that it could not affect the cause of death, which you are inquiring into*.

Coroner: *That is only your opinion, and might be repudiated by other medical opinion*.

Dr. Phillips*: Very well. I will give you the results of my post-mortem examination*.

Dr. Phillips then detailed the terrible wounds, which had been inflicted upon the woman, and described the parts of the body, which the perpetrator of the murder had carried away with him. He added: *I am of opinion that the length of the weapon with which the incisions were inflicted was at least five to six inches in length, probably more and must have been very sharp. The manner in which they had been done indicated a certain amount of anatomical knowledge*.

Coroner: *Can you give any idea how long it would take to perform the incisions found on the body?*

Dr. Phillips: *I think I can guide you by saying that I myself could not have performed all the injuries I saw on that woman, and effect them, even without a struggle, under a quarter of an hour. If I had done it in a deliberate way, such as would fall to the duties of a surgeon, it would probably have taken me the best part of an hour. The whole inference seems to me that the operation was performed to enable the perpetrator to obtain possession of these parts of the body*.

Foreman of the jury: *Is there anything to indicate that the crime in the case of the woman Nichols was perpetrated with the same object as this?*

Coroner: *There is a difference in this respect, at all events, that the medical expert is of opinion that, in the case of Nichols, the mutilations were made first*.

Foreman of the jury: *Was any photograph of the eyes of the deceased taken, in case they should retain any impression of the murderer?*

Dr. Phillips: *I have no particular opinion upon that point myself. I was asked about it very early in the inquiry, and I gave my opinion that the operation would be useless, especially in this case. The use of a bloodhound was also suggested. It may be my ignorance, but the blood around was that of the murdered woman, and it would be more likely to be traced than the murderer. The police submitted these questions to me very early. I think within twenty-four hours of the murder of the woman*.

Coroner: *Were the injuries to the face and neck such as might have produced insensibility?*

Dr. Phillips: *Yes; they were consistent with partial suffocation*.

The main contentious issue with this murder is the removal of the uterus, which for many years experts have suggested was carried out by the killer at the scene. The doctor who went to the murder scene and made a cursory examination did not record any organs having been removed at that time. However, he only found the uterus had been removed when conducting the post-mortem some seven hours later and stated that the person who removed the organ must have had some anatomical knowledge and stated

that it would have taken a skilled medical man like himself upwards of fifteen minutes and up to one hour to carry out such a removal at the murder location.

The inquest testimony highlights a number of discrepancies. Dr. Phillips who was the last person to arrive at the murder scene states that the intestines had been taken out and placed over her shoulder. However James Kent one of the first persons who went to the murder scene states, "*The entrails were protruding, and were lying across her left side.*" It should be noted that it is not necessary to take out the intestines to remove a uterus. It is also a fact that the intestines are compacted within the body and once the abdominal wall is opened the intestines recoil outwards. So it is quite possible that during the abdominal mutilation process carried out by the killer the intestines did just that, giving the appearance of having been placed. Or equally during the frenzied attack on the abdomen the killer deliberately ripped them out.

Another issue is with the body of the victim. It was taken by the police ambulance (handcart) to the Workhouse mortuary, which in those days was nothing more than a wooden shed. It was under the care of the mortuary keeper, Robert Mann until 2pm that same day, some seven hours later when Dr. Phillips arrived and carried out the post-mortem. Robert Mann as well as being the mortuary keeper was also an inmate of the Workhouse and he himself was in 2009 named as being a likely suspect for Jack the Ripper by another author.

No one was supposed to touch or tamper with the body prior to the post-mortem being carried out. However, it is documented that other persons did have access to the body and touched and tampered with it for the purpose of stripping the body and cleaning it. The question is did anyone else, and if so for what purpose?

As a professional investigator I already had some serious nagging doubts about one particular previously accepted fact surrounding this specific murder. On the face of it there is a killer who goes with a prostitute into a backyard of a house in the early hours of the morning while it is still dark. He then kills her, mutilates her body and supposedly disembowels her, removing her uterus with the fallopian tubes attached, with what was described as anatomical knowledge. It is a fact that surgeons and doctors

require a great deal of light to locate organs and either operate on them or remove them.

But during this murder the killer is alleged to have targeted and removed a specific organ, the uterus and cut it out in almost total darkness. I cannot disagree with the doctor’s finding that the organ was removed with some precision. So could the killer have been a highly trained medical man or someone with anatomical knowledge? This theory is just one of a number of which have been looked at for over 125 years. If the killer was such a person then why would he mutilate the body? This would surely make his removal of any organs much more difficult if the motive for the murder was to obtain an organ. This would apply if the killer were taking an organ away as a trophy, as some serial killers have done in the past. Or was as there a much simpler explanation? At this point in time my investigation had thrown up more questions than answers and still I had no clues as to the identity of the killer.

Following the murder of Annie Chapman local businessmen and residents alike were unhappy with the police handling of the murders and got together to form The Whitechapel Vigilance Committee.

The committee was unhappy with the level of protection that the community was receiving from the police, so it introduced its own system of local patrols, using hand-picked unemployed men to patrol the streets of the East End every evening from midnight to between four and five the next morning. They operated in similar fashion to the police with each man having their own designated beat to patrol. Each of these men received a small wage from the committee. The men were armed with a police whistle, a pair of galoshes and a strong stick and wore noiseless shoes. The committee itself met each evening at nine in The Crown public house, and once the public house closed at 12.30 am the committee members would inspect and join the patrols. These patrols were shortly to be joined by those of the Working Men's Vigilance Committee. The chairman was George Lusk, who on October 10th 1888 received the much talked about “From Hell” letter, which contained half a human kidney, supposedly taken from a later victim and allegedly sent by Jack the Ripper. The letter was believed to have been a prank involving medical students who would have had access to kidney specimens quiet easily.

Following the commission of the two murders which followed on September 30th, which I will discuss shortly, the committee members wrote to the government under Lord Salisbury in an attempt to persuade them to offer a reward for information leading to the apprehension of the killer. When the Home Secretary Henry Matthews refused, the committee offered its own reward. The committee also employed two private detectives, Mr. Le Grand (or Grand) and Mr. J. H. Batchelor, to investigate the murders without the involvement of the local police. Both of these persons I will discuss at length later.

ELIZABETH STRIDE

Elizabeth Stride a forty-five-year-old prostitute was the next victim and was the first victim of the so-called “double event”. Her body was found in Dutfield’s Yard, which adjoins the International Workers Club in Berner Street, at about 1.00am on the night of 30th September 1888, by a salesman returning with his pony and cart. She died from a single cut to her throat, which severed the carotid artery and she bled to death. This wound was believed to have been made by a small knife. There were no other wounds found on her body. Speculation at the time suggested that the killer was disturbed and many modern-day researchers also subscribe to that view.

The crucial question in the Stride murder is: was she a victim of the Ripper or simply an unconnected victim? It would be foolhardy to dismiss any possibility lightly. After carefully assessing all the facts surrounding her murder, my conclusion was that Stride’s murder was not connected to any of either the previous or the later murders, and she was not a Ripper victim. In fact the police surgeon at the time also came to the same conclusion.

The murder location was different from all the previous victims and would be different from all the victims that would follow. The time of the murder was different; the knife used was also different. As with the previous murders the killer disappeared into the night. A number of witnesses came forward and gave police vague descriptions of males who had apparently been seen with Stride prior to her death. However, none of these descriptions were the same. It also has to be noted that Stride was working as a prostitute and was desperate to earn money, so on that basis she would have no doubt accosted anyone and everyone who crossed her path, hence the varying conflicting descriptions.

For far too long now researchers have placed too much importance to the descriptions of persons allegedly seen with Stride and also with Catherine Eddowes the next victim. To put these descriptions in the right perspective and to judge if they can be totally relied upon as being accurate we have to look at the current law regarding witness identification. The stated case I will refer to is R v. Turnbull 1976, from this case certain identification guidelines were then adopted. A pneumonic used to remember the various points is ADVOKATE:

Amount of time under observation: How long did the witness have the person/incident in view?

Distance: What was the distance between the witness and the person/incident?

Visibility: What was the visibility at the time? Factors include time of day/night, street lighting, etc.

Obstruction: Were there any obstructions to the view of the witness?

Known or seen before: Did the witness know, or had the witness ever seen, the person before? If so where and when?

Any reason to remember: Did the witness have any special reason for remembering the person/incident? Was there something specific that made the person/incident memorable?

Time lapse: How long has elapsed since the witness saw the person/incident?

Error or material discrepancy: Are there any errors or material discrepancies between descriptions in the first and subsequent accounts of the witness?

I know these guidelines were adopted for use in connection with the identification of modern-day offenders and suspects however, they can still safely be applied to the various witnesses and the description they give from 1888. Taking all that into account I would reiterate that in any event the various witness descriptions are unsafe and should not be relied upon.

No one was ever arrested in connection with her murder, although I would suggest her long-term boyfriend Michael Kidney must be a prime

suspect, as it was documented that they had a torrid and often violent relationship. During the inquest there was conflicting evidence given by witnesses and by Michael Kidney himself, relating to when he stated he had last seen her alive. Despite this he was never arrested and interviewed by the police and her murder remained unsolved, but even today her murder is still regarded by some as having been committed by Jack the Ripper, despite overwhelming evidence to suggest otherwise.

CATHERINE EDDOWES

The second victim of the bloody night of September 30th, was Catherine Eddowes, known as Kate, a prostitute aged forty-six. At 1.44 am she was found brutally murdered by a police officer in the darkest corner of Mitre Square, an area of London policed by the City of London Police adjoining Whitechapel. Her face and her abdominal area had been subjected to extensive brutal mutilations. There was no doubt she had been the victim of the most frenzied attack to date.

She was last seen alive at 1.00am when she was released from Bishopsgate Police Station having been arrested for being drunk earlier in the day. She was apparently seen by the police officer who released her, to turn left out of the doorway, which took her in the opposite direction of what would have been the fastest way back to Flower and Dean Street in Whitechapel, her home ground. However, this is contentious as the officer in the police station told her to close the door on her way out. Yet he was apparently able to see which direction she turned on leaving the station.

According to that officer she was heading back toward Aldgate High Street where she had earlier been found drunk. On going down Houndsditch she would have passed the entrance to Duke Street, at the end of which was Church Passage, which led into Mitre Square. It is estimated that it would have taken less than ten minutes to reach Mitre Square from Bishopsgate Police Station. This leaves a thirty minute gap from the time she leaves the police station to the time witnesses' state a female vaguely matching her description is seen talking with a male outside of Mitre Square shortly before her lifeless and mutilated body was discovered by Pc Watkins.

The inquest was opened on October 4th 1888 by Mr. S. F. Langham, coroner for the City of London. The first police witness was Pc Watkins who first discovered the body his testimony was:

“I was on duty at Mitre-square on Saturday night. I have been in the force seventeen years. I went on duty at 9.45 upon my regular beat. That extends from Duke-street, Aldgate, through Heneage-lane, a portion of Bury-street, through Cree-lane, into Leadenhall-street, along eastward into Mitre-street, then into Mitre-square, round the square again into Mitre-street, then into King-street to St. James's-place, round the place, then into Duke-street, where I started from. That beat takes twelve or fourteen minutes. I had been patrolling the beat continually from ten o'clock at night until one o'clock on Sunday morning.”

Coroner: *Had anything excited your attention during those hours?*

Watkins: *No*.

Coroner: *Or any person?*

Watkins: *No. I passed through Mitre-square at about 1.30 on the Sunday morning. I had my lantern alight and on - fixed to my belt. According to my usual practice, I looked at the different passages and corners*.

Coroner: *At half past one did anything excite your attention?*

Watkins*:* *No*.

Coroner: *Did you see anyone about?*

Watkins: *No*.

Coroner: *Could any people have been about that portion of the square without your seeing them?*

Watkins: *No. I next came into Mitre-square at 1.44, when I discovered the body lying on the right as I entered the square. The woman was on her back, with her feet towards the square. Her clothes were thrown up. I saw her throat was cut and the stomach ripped open. She was lying in a pool of blood. I did not touch the body. I ran across to Kearley and Long's warehouse. The door was ajar, and I pushed it open, and called on the watchman Morris, who was inside. He came out. I remained with the body until the arrival of Police-constable Holland. No one else was there before that but myself. Holland was followed by Dr. Sequeira. Inspector Collard arrived at about two o'clock, and also Dr. Brown, surgeon to the police force*.

Coroner: *When you first saw the body did you hear any footsteps as if anybody were running away?*

Watkins: *No. The door of the warehouse to which I went was ajar, because the watchman was working about. It was no unusual thing for the door to be ajar at that hour of the morning. I was continually patrolling my beat from ten o'clock up to half past one. I noticed nothing unusual up till 1.44, when I saw the body. I did not sound an alarm. We do not carry whistles. My beat is not a double but a single beat. No other policeman comes into Mitre-street.*

The second police witness was Police Constable Harvey whose beat bordered on Mitre Square he stated, *"At 1.40 am I went down Duke Street and down Church Passage and into Mitre Square. I saw no one. I heard no cry or noise."*

The next witnesses were the doctors who attended the murder scene and later carried out the post-mortem. The first doctor who attended the murder scene was Dr. Sequeira his testimony was:

Dr. G. W. Sequeira, surgeon, of No. 34, Jewry-street, Aldgate, deposed: *"On the morning of Sept. 30 I was called to Mitre-square, and I arrived at five minutes to two o'clock, being the first medical man on the scene of the murder. I saw the position of the body, and I entirely agree with the evidence of Dr. Gordon Brown in that respect. I am well acquainted with the locality and the position of the lamps in the square. Where the murder was committed was probably the darkest part of the square, but there was sufficient light to enable the miscreant to perpetrate the deed. I think that the murderer had no design on any particular organ of the body. He was not possessed of any great anatomical skill."*

Coroner: *Can you account for the absence of noise?*

Dr. Sequeira**:** *The death must have been instantaneous after the severance of the windpipe and the blood vessels*.

Coroner: *Would you have expected the murderer to be bespattered with blood?*

Dr. Sequeira: *Not necessarily*.

Coroner: *How long do you believe life had been extinct when you arrived?*

Dr. Sequeira: *Very few minutes - probably not more than a quarter of an hour* **.**

Dr. Brown attended the murder scene shortly after the arrival of Dr Sequeira. He examined the body at the scene and was responsible for carrying out the post-mortem later that day. His testimony was:

"I arrived at Mitre Square around 2.00am. The body was on its back, the head turned to left shoulder. The arms by the side of the body as if they had fallen there. Both palms upwards, the fingers slightly bent. The left leg extended in a line with the body. The abdomen was exposed. Right leg bent at the thigh and knee. The throat cut across.

"The intestines were drawn-out to a large extent and placed over the right shoulder -- they were smeared over with some feculent matter. A piece of about two feet was quite detached from the body and placed between the body and the left arm, apparently by design. The lobe and auricle of the right ear were cut obliquely through.

"There was a quantity of clotted blood on the pavement on the left side of the neck round the shoulder and upper part of arm, and fluid blood-coloured serum which had flowed under the neck to the right shoulder, the pavement sloping in that direction.

"Body was quite warm. No death stiffening had taken place. She must have been dead most likely within the half hour. We looked for superficial bruises and saw none. No blood on the skin of the abdomen or secretion of any kind on the thighs. No spurting of blood on the bricks or pavement around. No marks of blood below the middle of the body. Several buttons were found in the clotted blood after the body was removed. There was no blood on the front of the clothes. There were no traces of recent connexion.

"When the body arrived at Golden Lane, some of the blood was dispersed through the removal of the body to the mortuary. The clothes were taken off carefully from the body. A piece of deceased's ear dropped from the clothing. I made a post-mortem examination at half past two on Sunday afternoon. Rigor mortis was well marked; body not quite cold. Green discoloration over the abdomen.

"After washing the left hand carefully, a bruise the size of a sixpence, recent and red, was discovered on the back of the left hand between the thumb and first finger. A few small bruises on right shin of older date. The hands and arms were bronzed. No bruises on the scalp, the back of the body, or the elbows.

"The face was very much mutilated. There was a cut about a quarter of an inch through the lower left eyelid, dividing the structures completely through. The upper eyelid on that side, there was a scratch through the skin on the left upper eyelid, near to the angle of the nose. The right eyelid was cut through to about half an inch.

"There was a deep cut over the bridge of the nose, extending from the left border of the nasal bone down near the angle of the jaw on the right side of the cheek. This cut went into the bone and divided all the structures of the cheek except the mucous membrane of the mouth.

"The tip of the nose was quite detached by an oblique cut from the bottom of the nasal bone to where the wings of the nose join on to the face. A cut from this divided the upper lip and extended through the substance of the gum over the right upper lateral incisor tooth.

"About half an inch from the top of the nose, was another oblique cut. There was a cut on the right angle of the mouth as if the cut of a point of a knife. The cut extended an inch and a half, parallel with the lower lip. There was on each side of cheek a cut which peeled up the skin, forming a triangular flap about an inch and a half. On the left cheek there were two abrasions of the epithelium under the left ear.

"The throat was cut across to the extent of about six or seven inches. A superficial cut commenced about an inch and a half below the lobe below, and about two and a half inches behind the left ear, and extended across the throat to about three inches below the lobe of the right ear.

"The big muscle across the throat was divided through on the left side. The large vessels on the left side of the neck were severed. The larynx was severed below the vocal chord. All the deep structures were severed to the bone, the knife marking intervertebral cartilages. The sheath of the vessels on the right side was just opened.

"The carotid artery had a fine hole opening; the internal jugular vein was opened about an inch and a half -- not divided. The blood vessels contained clot. All these injuries were performed by a sharp instrument like a knife, and pointed.

"The cause of death was haemorrhage from the left common carotid artery. The death was immediate and the mutilations were inflicted after death.

"We examined the abdomen. The front walls were laid open from the breastbones to the pubes. The cut commenced opposite the ensiform cartilage. The incision went upwards, not penetrating the skin that was over the sternum. It then divided the ensiform cartilage. The knife must have cut obliquely at the expense of that cartilage.

"Behind this, the liver was stabbed as if by the point of a sharp instrument. Below this was another incision into the liver of about two and a half inches, and below this the left lobe of the liver was slit through by a vertical cut. Two cuts were shown by a jagging of the skin on the left side.

"The abdominal walls were divided in the middle line to within a quarter of an inch of the navel. The cut then took a horizontal course for two inches and a half towards the right side. It then divided round the navel on the left side, and made a parallel incision to the former horizontal incision, leaving the navel on a tongue of skin. Attached to the navel was two and a half inches of the lower part of the rectus muscle on the left side of the abdomen. The incision then took an oblique direction to the right and was shelving. The incision went down the right side of the vagina and rectum for half an inch behind the rectum.

"There was a stab of about an inch on the left groin. This was done by a pointed instrument. Below this was a cut of three inches going through all tissues making a wound of the peritoneum about the same extent.

"An inch below the crease of the thigh was a cut extending from the anterior spine of the ilium obliquely down the inner side of the left thigh and separating the left labium, forming a flap of skin up to the groin. The left rectus muscle was not detached.

"There was a flap of skin formed by the right thigh, attaching the right labium, and extending up to the spine of the ilium. The muscles on the right side inserted into the frontal ligaments were cut through.

"The skin was retracted through the whole of the cut through the abdomen, but the vessels were not clotted. Nor had there been any appreciable bleeding from the vessels. I draw the conclusion that the act was made after death, and there would not have been much blood on the murderer. The cut was made by someone on the right side of the body, kneeling below the middle of the body.

"I removed the content of the stomach and placed it in a jar for further examination. There seemed very little in it in the way of food or fluid, but from the cut end partly digested farinaceous food escaped.

"The intestines had been detached to a large extent from the mesentery. About two feet of the colon was cut away. The sigmoid flexure was invaginated into the rectum very tightly. Right kidney was pale, bloodless with slight congestion of the base of the pyramids.

"There was a cut from the upper part of the slit on the under surface of the liver to the left side, and another cut at right angles to this, which were about an inch and a half deep and two and a half inches long. Liver itself was healthy.

"The gall bladder contained bile. The pancreas was cut, but not through, on the left side of the spinal column. Three and a half inches of the lower border of the spleen by half an inch was attached only to the peritoneum.

"The peritoneal lining was cut through on the left side and the left kidney carefully taken out and removed. The left renal artery was cut through. I would say that someone who knew the position of the kidney must have done it.

"The lining membrane over the uterus was cut through. The womb was cut through horizontally, leaving a stump of three quarters of an inch. The rest of the womb had been taken away with some of the ligaments. The vagina and cervix of the womb was uninjured.

"The bladder was healthy and uninjured, and contained three or four ounces of water. There was a tongue-like cut through the anterior wall of

the abdominal aorta. The other organs were healthy. There were no indications of connexion. I believe the wound in the throat was first inflicted. I believe she must have been lying on the ground.

"The wounds on the face and abdomen prove that they were inflicted by a sharp, pointed knife and that in the abdomen by one six inches or longer.

"I believe the perpetrator of the act must have had considerable knowledge of the position of the organs in the abdominal cavity and the way of removing them. It required a great deal of medical knowledge to have removed the kidney and to know where it was placed. The parts removed would be of no use for any professional purpose.

"I think the perpetrator of this act had sufficient time, or he would not have nicked the lower eyelids. It would take at least five minutes. I cannot assign any reason for the parts being taken away. I feel sure that there was no struggle, and believe it was the act of one person.

"The throat had been so instantly severed that no noise could have been emitted. I should not expect much blood to have been found on the person who had inflicted these wounds. The wounds could not have been self-inflicted.

"My attention was called to the apron, particularly the corner of the apron with a string attached. The blood spots were of recent origin. I have seen the portion of an apron produced by Dr. Phillips and stated to have been found in Goulston Street. It is impossible to say that it is human blood on the apron. I fitted the piece of apron, which had a new piece of material on it (which had evidently been sewn on to the piece I have), the seams of the borders of the two actually corresponding. Some blood and apparently faecal matter was found on the portion that was found in Goulston Street."

Dr. Brown was later recalled to give further medical evidence:

"I am surgeon to the City of London Police. I was called shortly after two o'clock on Sunday morning, and reached the place of the murder about twenty minutes past two. My attention was directed to the body of the deceased. It was lying in the position described by Watkins, on its back, the head turned to the left shoulder, the arms by the side of the body, as if they had fallen there. Both palms were upwards, the fingers slightly bent. A

thimble was lying near. The clothes were thrown up. The bonnet was at the back of the head. There was great disfigurement of the face. The throat was cut across. Below the cut was a neckerchief. The upper part of the dress had been torn open. The body had been mutilated, and was quite warm – no rigor mortis. The crime must have been committed within half an hour or certainly within forty minutes from the time when I saw the body. There were no stains of blood on the bricks or pavement around…

"Before we removed the body Dr. Phillips was sent for, as I wished him to see the wounds, he having been engaged in a case of a similar kind previously. He saw the body at the mortuary. The clothes were removed from the deceased carefully. I made a post-mortem examination on Sunday afternoon. There was a bruise on the back of the left hand, and one on the right shin, but this had nothing to do with the crime. There were no bruises on the elbows or the back of the head. The face was very much mutilated, the eyelids, the nose, the jaw, the cheeks, the lips, and the mouth all bore cuts. There were abrasions under the left ear. The throat was cut across to the extent of six or seven inches."

Coroner*: Can you tell us what was the cause of death?*

Dr. Brown*: The cause of death was haemorrhage from the throat. Death must have been immediate*.

Coroner*: There were other wounds on the lower part of the body?*

Dr. Brown*: Yes; deep wounds, which were inflicted after death*.

Coroner*: I understand that you found certain portions of the body removed?*

Dr. Brown*: Yes. The uterus was cut away with the exception of a small portion, and the left kidney was also cut out. Both these organs were absent, and have not been found*.

Coroner*: Have you any opinion as to what position the woman was in when the wounds were inflicted?*

Dr. Brown*: In my opinion the woman must have been lying down. The way in which the kidney was cut out showed that it was done by somebody who knew what he was about*.

Coroner*: Does the nature of the wounds lead you to any conclusion as to the instrument that was used?*

Dr. Brown*: It must have been a sharp-pointed knife, and I should say at least 6 inches long*.

Coroner*: Would you consider that the person who inflicted the wounds possessed anatomical skill?*

Dr. Brown*: He must have had a good deal of knowledge as to the position of the abdominal organs, and the way to remove them*.

Coroner*: Would the parts removed be of any use for professional purposes?*

Dr. Brown*: None whatever*.

Coroner***:*** *Would the removal of the kidney, for example, require special knowledge?*

Dr. Brown: *It would require a good deal of knowledge as to its position, because it is apt to be overlooked, being covered by a membrane*.

Coroner: *Would such knowledge be likely to be possessed by someone accustomed to cutting up animals?*

Dr. Brown: *Yes*.

Coroner: *Have you been able to form any opinion as to whether the perpetrator of this act was disturbed?*

Dr. Brown*: I think he had sufficient time, but it was in all probability done in a hurry*.

Coroner: *How long would it take to make the wounds?*

Dr. Brown: *It might be done in five minutes. It might take him longer; but that is the least time it could be done in*.

Coroner: *Can you, as a professional man, ascribe any reason for the taking away of the parts you have mentioned?*

Dr. Brown: *I cannot give any reason whatever*.

Coroner: *Have you any doubt in your own mind whether there was a struggle?*

Dr. Brown*: I feel sure there was no struggle. I see no reason to doubt that it was the work of one man*.

Coroner: *Would any noise be heard, do you think?*

Dr. Brown: *I presume the throat was instantly severed, in which case there would not be time to emit any sound*.

Coroner: *Does it surprise you that no sound was heard?*

Dr. Brown: *No*.

Coroner: *Would you expect to find much blood on the person inflicting these wounds?*

Dr. Brown: *No, I should not. I would say that the abdominal wounds were inflicted by a person kneeling at the right side of the body. The wounds could not possibly have been self-inflicted*.

Coroner: *Was your attention called to the portion of the apron that was found in Goulston Street?*

Dr. Brown: *Yes. I fitted that portion which was spotted with blood to the remaining portion, which was still attached by the strings to the body*.

Coroner: *Have you formed any opinion as to the motive for the mutilation of the face?*

Dr. Brown: *It was to disfigure the corpse, I should imagine*.

A juror: *Was there any evidence of a drug having been used?*

Dr. Brown*: I have not examined the stomach as to that. The contents of the stomach have been preserved for analysis…*

Pc Long who discovered the graffiti and the apron piece was then called his testimony was:

"I was on duty in Goulston-street, Whitechapel, on Sunday morning, Sept. 30th, and about five minutes to three o'clock I found a portion of a white apron (produced). There were recent stains of blood on it. The apron was lying in the passage leading to the staircase of Nos. 106 to 119, a model dwelling house. Above on the wall was written in chalk, "The Jews are the men that will not be blamed for nothing." I at once searched the

staircase and areas of the building, but did not find anything else. I took the apron to Commercial-road Police-station and reported to the inspector on duty."

Coroner*: Had you been past that spot previously to your discovering the apron?*

Long: *I passed about twenty minutes past two o'clock.*

Coroner: *Are you able to say whether the apron was there then?*

Long: *It was not.*

Coroner: *As to the writing on the wall, have you not put a "not" in the wrong place? Were not the words, "The Jews are not the men that will be blamed for nothing"?*

Long: *I believe the words were as I have stated.*

Coroner: *Was not the word "Jews" spelt "Juwes?"*

Long*: It may have been.*

Coroner: *Yet you did not tell us that in the first place. Did you make an entry of the words at the time?*

Long: *Yes, in my pocketbook.*

Coroner: *Is it possible that you have put the "not" in the wrong place?*

Long: *It is possible, but I do not think that I have.*

Coroner: *Which did you notice first - the piece of apron or the writing on the wall? –*

Long: *The piece of apron, one corner of which was wet with blood.*

Coroner: *How came you to observe the writing on the wall?*

Long: *I saw it while trying to discover whether there were any marks of blood about.*

Coroner*: Did the writing appear to have been recently done? - I could not form an opinion.*

Coroner: *Do I understand that you made a search in the model dwelling house?*

Long: *I went into the staircases.*

Coroner: *Did you not make inquiries in the house itself?*

Long*: No.*

As with the murders of Annie Chapman and Polly Nichols there are many similarities, which suggest all three were killed by the same hand. Having carefully reviewed all the facts surrounding the murder of Eddowes there are many issues which I would now suggest cast a major doubt about some of the previously accepted theories surrounding not only this murder and the murder of Chapman and Nichols, but all of the victims discussed up until now and those I will discuss later.

The post-mortem, which did not take place till twelve hours later, revealed that her kidney and uterus had been removed. The doctors at the crime scene found no evidence of any organs having been removed. Serious questions must now be asked as to whether the killer did actually remove those organs as has been suggested or whether there is a more plausible explanation, which would also relate to the removal of the uterus from Chapman.

I first looked closely at the times relative to the murder of Eddowes. Pc Watkins who found the body stated that he was in Mitre Square at 1.30am and saw or heard nothing. He stated he had his police lantern illuminated. He returned to the square at 1.44am. Fourteen minutes later and found the mutilated body of Eddowes in what was described as the darkest part of the square. At that time he saw or heard nothing.

A number of witnesses who had left a nearby club at 1.35am state they saw a female fitting the description of Eddowes talking with a male outside the entrance to Mitre Square at Church Passage, which is the entrance and exit furthest away from the entrance and exit from which Pc Watkins was using. If those witnesses are correct and they did see Eddowes with her killer, then that only leaves a nine-minute window before Pc Watkins returned. If Pc Harvey is correct then that time is foreshortened because he stated he went as far as Mitre Square at 1.40am. So in effect that only

leaves approximately five minutes for the killer to carry out the murder and the mutilations and allegedly remove two vital organs with medical precision in almost total darkness.

As with the murder of Chapman we have a killer who goes with a prostitute to a dark and secluded location and kills and mutilates the body. The suggestion is then that with anatomical knowledge using what was described as a six-inch long bladed knife proceeds to remove a kidney and uterus. If organ harvesting was the motive for the murders then as I said previously, why mutilate the abdomen in such a way as to inhibit the removal of any organs? The same can be said for the suggestion that the organs were taken away as trophies.

The other important issue to consider is the time factor. Would the killer have been able to work within the five-minute time window?

From my limited medical knowledge I am aware that the kidney is a difficult organ to locate. It is to be found encased in renal fat. In the case of Eddowes it was her left kidney. I am reliably informed that a quick removal technique for the kidney would have been to locate the renal fat, take hold of it and simply tear it out. In this case that was not done. I therefore did not believe it possible for the killer to have removed the organs given the time, the location, and the light available to him to be able to effect such removals with some precision as is described.

I have no doubt that the organs from both Eddowes and Chapman were removed by someone with some anatomical knowledge, which is the conclusion the doctors came to. The question is where were they removed and by whom? I believe the answer is quite simple.

In 1888 medical sciences were less advanced than they are now and many areas of medicine were still being investigated. This research would have called for the use of organs and body parts, which had been for many years very difficult to acquire by conventional means. As a result in 1832 The Anatomy Act was passed allowing bona fide medical personnel, i.e. doctors, medical students, anatomists to go to mortuaries and freely obtain organs and in some cases a complete body for medical research.

Following the inquest of Chapman where it was disclosed that a mystery American had been looking to pay to acquire a uterus, it was therefore

suggested that this could be the motive for her murder. The Pall Mall Gazette published a letter, which was obviously from someone within the medical profession the letter read:

"The only practical thing to be done is to keep a sharp lookout and to dismiss once for all the Coroner's theory as to the motive of the murder. The Coroner seems to have been the innocent victim of a stupid hoax. If he had made enquiries of the sub curator of the pathological museum he would have discovered that the figure named is a quite preposterous and impossible price for the missing portion of the human body. It is best to get the plain facts plainly forth, and the following letter of prices current containing latest quotations for various parts of the human body suffices. The following are the prices, which we are paying at present for anatomical subjects.

For one corpse complete £3.5shillings

For one thorax 5 shillings

For one arm, one leg, one head and neck, and one abdomen 15 shillings

"The prices refer to pickled dissecting room subjects. The organ removed by the murderer can be had for the asking at any post-mortem room 12 hours after death. This being so, what comes of the Coroner's theory that the murders were committed in order to secure the bonus of £20 offered by the mythical American in question?

In the light of this it would be wrong to rule out the fact that the organs of Annie Chapman and Catherine Eddowes were expertly removed, not at the crime scenes by the murderer but after the bodies had been taken to the mortuary and before the post-mortems were carried out.

It is fact that both bodies were taken and left for many hours and left unattended before the doctors returned to conduct the post-mortems. It is also a fact that every morning there would be a constant stream of medical personnel who would visit the mortuaries seeking out specimens to take away for research.

By law of course the bodies of the victims should not have been touched or tampered with before the post-mortems, but in a mortuary containing many bodies some inside and some outside, it would not have been too

difficult for someone with medical knowledge to quickly remove these organs, or to even perhaps pay the poor mortuary keeper to turn a blind eye in order to do so.

In the cases of Eddowes and Chapman the task would have been much easier as the abdomens of both had already opened by the killer. The end result would have been that the findings of the post-mortem would, quite naturally, have left everyone thinking that the killer had removed the organs at the murder scene, coupled with the belief that the killer had done so with some anatomical knowledge.

You may be asking why, if Chapman's and Eddowes' organs were removed, as I suggest, why weren't any removed from the other victims? The answer is simple: these were the only two victims who were savagely mutilated to the extent that their abdomens were ripped open and their intestines removed. The other victims were not mutilated to this degree, so it would have been very difficult for anyone to remove the organs for fear of their absence being noted at the post-mortem. The bodies of Chapman and Eddowes were the only two bodies left unattended for long periods of time at the mortuaries.

There is one final important point to be mentioned with regards to the suggestion that the killer did remove the organs from Chapman and Eddowes and that is, it is a fact that Eddowes and Chapman were subjected to ferocious acts of mutilation committed in a frenzied attack. Having said that it is not logical for the killer having done all of that and then to suddenly compose himself sufficiently to be able to suddenly switch off, calm down to be able to remove these vital organs with medical precision. Further medical evidence would later come to light, which showed that the removal of the uteri from both victims was carried out in different ways, adding more weight to my theory.

The murder of Eddowes differs in a further respect from the previous murders discussed. After her body was discovered, just over an hour later there came to the notice of the police two pieces of what has been looked upon as "significant evidence", which at the time was suggested as being material to the murder and has generally been accepted as so by many researchers up until the present day.

This “evidence” was found by a Metropolitan police officer Pc Long in a stairwell leading to dwellings in Goulston Street, a nine-minute walk from the Eddowes crime scene. Having examined all of this evidence carefully, I now suggest that perhaps the police and other experts have been wrong all this time about this “significant evidence”.

The first piece of “evidence” was a piece of apron, which was later matched to another piece of apron “found” on Eddowes. I use the word found as many researchers subscribe to the theory that Eddowes was in fact wearing an apron and the killer cut or tore a piece to take with him for the purpose of taking away the organs in, or for wiping his blood stained hands and knife on before depositing it in Goulston Street. The size of this apron piece has never been fully established, but is mainly referred to as a portion or a piece.

The apron piece found by Pc Long in Goulston Street has been described in different ways, by different people; both in official reports and in various newspapers of the day who reported on the inquest and these reports show many discrepancies and inconsistencies. The official reports are what should be accepted as being correct. The reports would have been in written form and would have been made out by the witnesses as soon as practicable after the event, when matters would have still been fresh in their minds. These reports would have been referred to by the witnesses at the subsequent inquest.

Pc Long’s official statement: *“I found a portion of a woman’s apron, there appeared blood stains on it, one portion was we*t.”

Pc Long as quoted in The Telegraph Inquest report: *“I found a portion of white apron, there were recent stains of blood on it.”*

Pc Long as quoted in The Times Inquest report: *“I found a portion of a woman’s apron, there were recent stains of blood on it, one corner was wet with blood.”*

As far as his statement is concerned and the subsequent press reports there are several differences. All state that the apron piece had bloodstains on it. One suggests that a corner was wet with blood, and another simply states that one portion was wet.

Dr. Brown's official statement: *"I have seen a portion of an apron produced by Dr. Phillips and stated to have been found in Goulston Street. I fitted the piece of apron, which had a new piece of material on it, which had evidently been sewn to the piece I have. The seams of the borders of the two actually corresponding. Some blood and apparently faecal matter was found on the portion found in Goulston Street."*

Dr. Brown as quoted in The Telegraph Inquest report: *"I fitted that portion which was spotted with blood to the remaining portion, which was still attached by the strings to the body."*

Dr. Brown as quoted in The Times Inquest report: *"On the piece brought on there were smears of blood on one side as if a hand of knife had been wiped on it."*

Dr. Brown in his official statement states that the apron piece was found with some blood on it and faecal matter. In the newspaper reports he states that it was spotted with blood, and smeared with blood on one side.

Several questions arise. When was the apron piece removed and by whom, and for what reasons? And how long had it been at the location where it was found? The police also believed the apron piece showed the direction in which the killer had escaped. Regardless of whether he had deliberately left it or accidentally dropped it. If the apron piece had been cut or torn by the killer why did he not retain it and send it to the press with the half kidney and the letter later sent to the press purporting to be from the killer. This would be very strong evidence in support of the letter being from the killer and the fact that he had removed the organs.

I must also ask why the killer would have cut off a piece of the apron. If it was for the reasons that have been suggested, there is no evidence of a similar act in any of the other murders. If it was to clean his knife with, he could have done that at the scene with one swift wipe across her clothing. If it was to clean his hands with, he could have done that at the scene without cutting off or tearing and taking away a piece of apron. Even if he did cut or tear it off, surely he would have discarded it long before reaching Goulston Street. He would not have wanted to be seen walking down the road in possession of incriminating evidence wiping his bloodstained hands, or a

knife. Besides, the killer may have worn gloves and not needed to clean his hands.

So now another important question must now be asked. Was she or wasn't she wearing an apron at the time of her murder? In Victorian times the women wore two different types of aprons, the first being the type mainly now worn in this day and age, which goes around the waist and is tied at the back with two strings. The other version was a full apron, which started around the neck and in length went down in equal distance to the full-length dresses women of that era wore.

However, Eddowes may well have not been wearing an apron, but simply during the time leading up to her murder been in possession of two separate pieces of old apron, which had originally come from an apron that was of the type which fitted around the waist with two strings attached.

If that is the case is there any evidence to support this? The answer is yes, but we first have to go back to the movement of the body from the murder scene and the subsequent removal of her clothes at the mortuary, a process that took place there involving police officers and doctors. We first have to look at the timings following the removal of the body to the mortuary.

Body removed from crime scene 2.55am

Body arrived at the mortuary 3.15am

Body stripped and clothing listed

Persons present: Dr. Brown, Dr. Sequeira, Mr. Davis mortuary keeper, Inspector Collard, Dc Halse

In accordance with protocol the clothing would have been carefully removed and each item listed separately starting off at the top of the body and working downwards and removing and listing each item as it was removed. If Eddowes had been wearing an apron then it would have been one of the first items removed and would have appeared at the beginning of the list. Having regard to the suggestion that a portion or piece had been cut or torn I would have expected it to have been described as "white apron with piece missing". Below is the official list of her clothing as produced by Inspector Collard at the inquest:

“Black Straw Bonnet – trimmed with green and black velvet and black beads, black strings. The bonnet was loosely tied and had partially fallen from the back of her head, no blood on front, but the back was lying in a pool of blood, which had run from the neck.

“Black Cloth Jacket – imitation fur edging round collar, fur round sleeves, no blood on front outside, large quantity of blood inside and outside back, outside back very dirty with blood and dirt, two outside pockets, trimmed black silk braid and imitation fur.

“Chintz Skirt” – three flounces, brown button on waistband, jagged cut six inches long from waistband, left side of front, edges slightly bloodstained, also blood on bottom, front and back of skirt.

“Brown Linsey Dress Bodice – black velvet collar, brown metal buttons down front, blood inside and outside of back of neck of shoulders, clean cut bottom of left side, five inches long from right to left.

“Grey Stuff Petticoat – white waistband cut one and a half inches long, thereon in front edges blood stained, blood stains at front and bottom of petticoat.

“Very Old Green Alpaca Skirt – jagged cut ten and a half inches long, through waistband downwards, blood stained inside front undercut.

“Very Old Ragged Blue Skirt – red flounce, light twill lining, jagged cut ten and a half inches long, through waistband downwards, blood stained inside, outside back and front.

“White Calico Chemise – very much bloodstained all over apparently torn thus in middle of front.

“Man’s White Vest – button to match down front, two outside pockets, torn at back, very much bloodstained at back, blood and other stains on front.

“No drawers or stays.

“Pair of men’s lace-up boots.

“One Piece of Red Gauze Silk – various cuts thereon found on neck.”

Note there is no mention of an apron. Listed below is the list of her additional property and her personal effects:

“One Large White Handkerchief – bloodstained.

“Two Unbleached Calico Pockets – tape strings, cut through, also top left hand corners, cut off one.

“One Blue Striped Bed Ticking pocket – waistband and strings cut through, all three pockets blood stained.

“One White Cotton Pocket Handkerchief – red and white.

“One Pair Ribbed Stockings – feet mended with white.

“12 Pieces of White Rag – some slightly bloodstained.

“One Piece of White Coarse Linen.

“One Piece of White and Blue Shirting (Three Cornered).

“Two Small Blue Bed Ticking Bags.

“Two Short Clay Pipes (Black).

“Two Tin Boxes Containing Tea and Sugar.

“One Piece of Flannel and Six Pieces of Soap.

“One Small Toothcomb.

“One White Handled Table Knife and Spoon.

“One Red leather Cigarette Case and Tin Matchbox (Empty).

“One Ball of Hemp.

“One Piece of Red Flannel Containing Pins and Needles.

“One Piece of Old White Apron.”

Note the item listed at the end, “one piece of old white apron”, clearly this must be an indication that she was not wearing an apron but as I suggest, originally been in possession of two apron pieces. It should also be noted that this piece of apron found with the body was not described as

being cut or torn of had any traces of blood as you might expect if she had have been wearing it around her waist at the time of her death.

It can be seen that they removed from the body all of the clothing as they came to it as it was on the body. From the descriptions of the clothing it would appear that the killer stabbed Eddowes at least four times through her outer clothing, before lifting the lower clothing up above her abdomen.

This can be seen by the descriptions of the downward cuts as described on some of the items of clothing, which ran from the waistline down towards the lower abdomen, and across the midline of the abdomen. This also goes to show that the killer had no design on the organs, otherwise why would he risk damaging organs by thrusting a long-bladed knife wildly and blindly into the stomach and drawing it down and across into the abdomen.

As with the apron piece found in Goulston Street, there are conflicting accounts and descriptions given by the police officers and doctors, both in their official statements, and as reported by the press in the various newspapers with regards to the apron piece from the mortuary.

The official statement of Dr. Brown I believe adds real corroboration to the fact that she wasn't wearing an apron. *"My attention was called to the apron it was the corner of the apron with the string attached."* This shows that the apron piece from the mortuary was of the type which originally had two strings attached.

However, he describes it as a corner piece with a string attached, so that would mean that it was either the left or right hand corner nearest to the waistband. So that would have meant that if she had been wearing the apron at the time of her death and the killer had cut or torn the apron piece found in Goulston Street then the rest of the apron would be left behind still attached to her body and still fixed with the two strings still attached, and would have been described as an old white apron with piece missing, not as was described as old white apron piece, and would have been of significant size for the doctors and police to document it as just that. But because the piece found in Goulston Street matched the piece from the mortuary what was accounted with the two pieces was in effect one half of an apron.

However, as previously stated there were discrepancies and conflicting reports both from official statements of officers and doctors alike.

Dr. Brown as quoted in The Telegraph Inquest report:

“Coroner: *Was your attention called to the portion of the apron that was found in Goulston-street?*

“Dr. Brown: *Yes I fitted that portion which was spotted with blood to the remaining portion, which was still attached by the strings to the body*.”

Note he refers to strings suggesting that the apron was still fixed to the body. This press report is incorrect and misleading. As has been previously stated the body arrived at the mortuary at 3.15am and was then stripped. The Goulston Street apron piece was at that time in the hands of Dr. Phillips who was at Leman Street Police Station and after receiving it later on, took it to the mortuary for it to be matched with the mortuary piece, but he did not arrive at the mortuary till after 5.20am so Dr. Brown could not have fitted the Goulston Street piece at the mortuary while the mortuary piece was affixed to the body.

Again with the police officers there are inconsistencies with the reports, Inspector Collard’s official statement: *“I produce a portion of the apron piece the deceased was apparently wearing which had been cut through and found outside her dress.”*

Note he says “apparently wearing” why was he not specific in his statement after all he was at the mortuary when the body was stripped, he produced the lists of her clothing and personal effects surely he must have know whether she was or wasn’t wearing one?

Inspector Collard as quoted in The Telegraph: *“It was then taken to the mortuary, and stripped by Mr. Davis, the mortuary keeper, in presence of the two doctors and myself. I have a list of articles of clothing more or less stained with blood and cut.”*

Inspector Collard as quoted in the Times: *“The body was taken to the mortuary. A portion of the apron was found on her, and the other portion picked up in Goulston Street, would also be produced.”*

His quotes from the above newspapers do not help in clarifying the matter.

Dc Halse who accompanied Inspector Collard to the mortuary in his official statement states: *"I accompanied Inspector Collard to the mortuary I saw the deceased stripped and saw that a portion of apron was missing."*

In this statement Halse does not help either way in proving or disproving whether she was or wasn't wearing an apron.

Dc Halse quoted in the Times Newspaper: "I *then saw the deceased undressed and noticed that a portion of the apron she wore was missing."*

Dc Halse quoted in The Telegraph: *"I saw the deceased and noticed that a portion of her apron was missing."*

The question must be as to what made him take specific note of the missing piece and when? The Goulston Street piece was not found until 2.55am and then the officer conveyed it to a police station arriving at about 3.15am that would have been the same time that the body of Eddowes arrived at the mortuary and was stripped. After all I would have thought the torn clothing caused by the knife and the wounds of Eddowes would have been more noticeable and warranted noting down. Or was it a case of him becoming aware of the significance of the apron piece much later?

The arguments and heated debates amongst researchers will continue to go on and on, many choosing to accept the press reports as being correct simply because some of the contents of those reports go towards the theory that she was wearing an apron at the time of her murder and the killer did cut or tear a piece from it for the reasons previously suggested, a view that I do not share.

If we accept that the piece of apron was correctly identified, as being connected to Eddowes' and the killer did not cut it or tear it, what other explanation could there be? I will put forward two plausible ones, which, many experts have foolishly chosen to disregard. However, as there is very little direct evidence in any event to prove the other theories, it would be unwise to dismiss anything which may add additional weight to existing evidence and, likewise, new explanations which could suggest that earlier theories have been wrong all these years.

My first explanation revolves around matters of personal feminine hygiene, which would account for the blood and faecal matter on the apron

piece and the description of how it was described when found. In Victorian times women of the lower class, when menstruating, did not use sanitary towels, as we know them today. If they bothered to use anything at all, it was a cotton rag.

In addition the use of public toilets was unheard of among this class owing to the fact that a penny was required (hence the saying “to spend a penny”) and most could not afford this. When outdoors they would relieve themselves wherever they could: waste ground, alleyways and stairwells. Could it have been that the piece of apron was cut or torn by Eddowes herself from her original apron or from half an apron for this purpose and then discarded when totally soiled or when she used the stairwell in Goulston Street as a toilet while passing through at some time before her murder or even earlier that day? After all, there was a six-hour gap from when she left home until her arrest for being drunk at approximately 8.30pm, and at least 45 minutes after her release from police custody before her murder. She was in the area earlier that day before being arrested for being drunk, and could have been in the Goulston Street area prior to her death.

She could have easily made her way towards Flower and Dean Street where her lodgings were, after being released from the police station that journey would have taken her no more that 10-12 minutes. Perhaps she did, and then perhaps she didn’t relish the thought of a confrontation with her boyfriend. After all, she had on leaving the police station told the police that she would likely as not get a hiding when she did return back, and with that in mind then decided to head back in the direction of the city to try to earn some money prostituting herself. Either way her journey could have taken her along Goulston Street and past the archway.

I note on page 157 of “The Complete Jack the Ripper A-Z” compiled by several eminent Ripper researchers, there is an interesting sentence regarding the movements of Eddowes prior to her death and I quote, “A*nd that shortly before she died she was probably seen talking to a strange man at a dark corner in a direction leading away from the lodging house where she was staying”*.

As it stands that does tend to confirm that in fact following her release from Bishopsgate Police Station she did in fact make her way back towards

Flower and Dean Street and her lodgings before making her way across to Mitre Square, a journey which could have taken her along Goulston Street. So it is quite feasible to suggest that it could have in fact been deposited by herself.

The apron piece was in the stairwell, so if it had been raining it would not have become wet with the rain. Maybe the wetness was caused by Eddowes' urine. It is a known fact that when drunken people are arrested and detained in police cells they sometime become incontinent and wet themselves. So that could explain the wetness of the piece found in Goulston Street. Sadly the police did not have the benefit of forensic or DNA tests. Had they been able to conduct those tests we would be able to come to a definitive answer.

The second explanation I will seek to advance is that if Eddowes was in the vicinity of Goulston Street prior to her death then it is quite possible that she could have met a client and gone under the archway to indulge in some sexual act and at the conclusion simply used one of the pieces of old white apron to wipe herself down and then simply discarded it.

There has been a further explanation suggested by some experts, which is of a far more serious nature and could show a police conspiracy to stir up further racial hatred against the Jewish community. To explore this in more detail we have to go back to Mitre Square the scene of the murder and in particular scrutinize the movements and activities of Detective Constable Halse from The City of London Police.

At the time the body of Eddowes was found Dc Halse was talking to two other City of London Detectives, Outram and Marriott. They were very close to Mitre Square and on hearing the whistles being sounded they all ran to Mitre Square, arriving at approximately 1.50am. Halse stated in his inquest testimony that he directed other officers to conduct a search of the "neighbourhood".

He himself never waited for the arrival of the doctors or any other senior officer. He stated that he left Mitre Square then went by way of Middlesex Street to Wentworth Street where he stopped and spoke to two men who gave satisfactory accounts of their movements and he allowed them to go on their way. One burning question at this time is why did Halse make his

way to Wentworth Street? Middlesex Street is on the border of the City of London Police district and Wentworth Street was covered by the Metropolitan Police. He then states he walked into Goulston Street passing by the archway, and then he made his way back to Mitre Square. Goulston Street as I have previously mentioned is within the Metropolitan Police district.

We now have to look at the timings, which are also pivotal to this. Halse leaves Mitre Square at approximately 2.00am. A normal walking time to Goulston Street would be around eight minutes. I would have expected him to have been moving much slower than normal walking pace by reason of him perhaps checking out doorways and alleyways etc. On that basis a direct route would therefore have taken as much as twice the normal walking time sixteen minutes approximately or even more. It is impossible to know at what speed Halse was walking or what he did en route.

However by his own admissions he did not go the direct route to Goulston Street, he went via Wentworth Street, which even under normal walking time would have added 5-10 minutes to a journey. On top of this he stops and speaks to two men before proceeding to Goulston Street. By my calculations that would have put him in Goulston Street between 2.20am-2.35am. Halse in fact stated at the inquest he came through Goulston Street at about 2.20am. So he was not walking very slowly which might suggest he was not doing thorough checks on buildings and alleyways en route.

Halse goes so far as to say that he even passed by the spot where the apron piece was later found and he saw nothing. Halse apparently did not see or hear Pc Long of the Metropolitan Police who was on patrol in Goulston Street at that time. Pc Long stated at the inquest that he passed by the archway at almost the same time as Halse and saw neither, Dc Halse or the apron piece in the archway.

The length of Goulston Street from end to end is approximately 280 yards. The distance from its junction with Wentworth Street and the archway where the apron piece was found is approximately 70 yards. I fail to see how at that time of the morning neither officer saw or heard anything of each other, or did they? No mention of them ever meeting was made at the inquest.

Halse then suddenly decides to return to Mitre Square. I would have expected him to have returned to one of the police stations to obtain further orders and to be given an update.

The accepted theory to date surrounding the apron piece has been that the killer discarded the apron piece, if that were the case then he was taking a chance of being seen and stopped in that location by either Pc Long or Dc Halse, or any other police officer on his route from Mitre Square. As I have previously stated I do not subscribe to that theory. So that leads me on to discuss the suggestion by some researchers of a police conspiracy.

I should also refer to a letter dated October 3rd 1888 from Sir Charles Warren to Sir James Fraser head of The City of London Police:
My Dear Fraser,
I have seen Mr. Matthews today and he is anxious to know whether it can be known that the torn bib of the woman murdered in Mitre Square cannot have been taken to Goulston Street by any person except the murderer.
In order to do this it is necessary if there is any proof that at the time the corpse was found the bib was found with a piece wanting, that the piece was not lying about the yard at the time the corpse was found and taken to Goulston Street by some of the lookers-on as a hoax, and that the piece found in Goulston Street is without doubt a portion of that which was worn by the woman.
I shall be very glad if you can give me the necessary particulars on this point [?].
Very truly yours, C.W.

If Eddowes did not deposit it herself then the only other person who could have been in a position to have done that apart from the killer, would have been Dc Halse from The City of London Police. He was one of the first officers to attend the murder scene and would have had every opportunity to remove one of the apron pieces and take it with him to Goulston Street where he could have deposited it and may well have even been responsible for the graffiti also found at that location. There is no logical explanation for him specifically making his way to Goulston Street other than perhaps for that purpose.

It has been suggested that in fact Dc Halse could even have met Pc Long after he had deposited the apron piece. He then told Pc Long about the

murder telling him to check all the alleyways etc. because Pc Long then suddenly finds the apron piece. It is suggested that Halse could have told him not say he had seen him as he was out of his jurisdiction and no one would have been any of the wiser with Pc Long getting the credit for finding the valuable evidence. It is an interesting speculative theory.

So if that were the case what was the motive? Clearly the motive would have been to add even more weight to the belief that Jack the Ripper was a member of the Jewish community and to stir up racial hatred towards them.

However, having mentioned this specific explanation I have to say that I do not subscribe to this. If Halse had removed the apron piece from the murder scene there would have been no need for him to deposit it in Goulston Street. He could have simply stated that he found it whilst searching the area following the discovery of the body. He would have been playing a dangerous game simply depositing it under the archway because he wouldn't have been able to guarantee it would be found and linked to the murder in any event, unless of course he had met and primed Pc Long to check the doorways etc.

The second piece of "significant evidence" was the graffiti found on the wall near to where the apron piece was found. It was suggested that this might have been written by the killer in an effort to implicate the Jews in the murders. As a result Sir Charles Warren the Metropolitan Police commissioner who visited Goulston Street in the early hours ordered that it be erased so as to not incite any racial hatred towards the Jewish community.

According to Pc Long the graffiti read: *"The Juwes are the men that will not be blamed for nothing."* However, when Dc Halse later returned back to Goulston Street he noted the graffiti down differently he recorded it as: *"The Juwes are the men that will be blamed for nothing."* Was this written by the killer, or someone not even connected to the murder? Or as some will ask did Dc Halse write it himself at the time he is supposed to have deposited the apron piece? After all when he later returned back to Goulston Street he became embroiled in an argument with Sir Charles Warren who wanted to erase it and Halse was opposed to that idea.

If it had been written by the killer who had wanted to leave a message then why not leave it at the murder scene, which is what signature killers do. After all there was no similar graffiti found at any of the previous murder locations, nor would there be at any subsequent murder locations.

According to Freemason folklore from the Old Testament, Juwes was the name given to Jubela, Jubelo, and Jubelum, the three assassins of the Grand Masonic Master, Hiram Abiff. Over the past 125 years many people have been trying to decipher and understand what the graffiti relates to and who wrote it. I have previously discussed this at length. As an investigator one has to always keep an open mind especially in a case like this where very little is conclusive.

However, the search to interpret the writing has still gone on with the result that no one has come up with a plausible interpretation. The general consensus is that it referred to the Jewish community due to the word "Juwes" appearing in the writing. If the writer was referring to the Jewish community why should he single out men in his writing, surely he would refer collectively to the Jewish community by writing "People","Those", "The Persons", "They" or "The ones", the writing is specifically aimed at "men".

However, if the graffiti was not connected to the murder there could be another interpretation. I would now seek to put forward what could be a plausible explanation. The English spoken and written language has always been at times difficult for many people to grasp in particular people from foreign countries. We have words that are written differently to how they are spoken or pronounced, and in Victorian times I would imagine it was even more difficult with a larger percentage of the population not even being able to read or write and of the others who could read and write were not proficient in correct spelling but merely wrote as they spoke.

In view of that an alternative explanation could be the writer of that graffiti intended to write, *"The Jurors are the men that will be blamed for nothing"* and wrote how he spoke. When spoken quickly the "R" and the "W" are very similar. Further corroboration to this theory is borne out by the fact that in 1888 all juries in criminal trials in this country were all male. It was not until 1919 that women were allowed to sit on a jury. So the graffiti could have been written by a disgruntled person who had perhaps

been convicted rightly, or wrongly by a jury, or someone who had sat on a jury and had been ridiculed for being responsible for finding someone guilty who others thought should have been acquitted.

I have said many times during my investigation and on a daily basis to other researchers it is for each individual to read, assess and evaluate what is presented to them and to accept or reject my explanations regarding the apron piece and the graffiti having regard to the fact that neither cannot be conclusively proved or disproved, which is the same for most of the theories surrounding the mystery. All of my new theories go against all that has been accepted for over 125 years, and Ripper researchers still find it hard to accept new evidence and theories.

So now I believed I was making progress by already casting a major doubt about several important evidential issues surrounding The Ripper mystery but I was still no nearer in identifying “Jack”.

MARY JANE KELLY

The next victim in chronological order was twenty-five-year-old Mary Kelly. Unlike the other prostitutes, who were killed on the streets where they worked, Kelly had her own private room. She met her death on the night of November 8th 1888, at 13, Miller’s Court, off Dorset Street, where she was disembowelled, disfigured and dismembered in a fury of madness. The post-mortem found no defensive wounds, nor any signs of a struggle. She may even have been killed as she slept or rendered unconscious first. Most of her vital organs had been removed from the body and were found in various parts of her room, but none appear to have been taken away despite the doctor’s initial report stating that the heart was absent from the pericardium. There was no suggestion that any organs had been removed with any medical precision. I think this fact alone adds more weight to my earlier suggestion that the organs removed from Chapman and Eddowes were removed by someone other than their killer.

The last person who supposedly saw her alive was a man by the name of George Hutchinson. He stated he was in the location of Miller’s Court at around 2.00am on November 9th and states he saw Kelly with a male and watched them walk off together towards the direction of her lodgings. For whatever reason Hutchinson did not come forward at the time but waited several days until after the short inquest to give his account.

The details of his statement are:

“About 2.00am, 9, I was coming by Thrawl Street, Commercial Street, and just before I got to Flower and Dean Street I met the murdered woman Kelly and she said to me, 'Hutchinson, will you lend me Sixpence?' I said, 'I can’t, I've spent all my money going down to Romford,' she said, 'Good morning, I must go and find some money.' She went away towards Thrawl Street, a man coming in the opposite direction to Kelly tapped her on the shoulder and said something to her, they both burst out laughing. I heard her say, 'Alright,' to him, and the man said, 'You will be alright for what I have told you,' he then placed his right hand around her shoulders. He also had a kind of a small parcel in his left hand, with a kind of strap round it. I stood against the lamp of the Queen’s Head public house and watched him. They both came past me, and the man hung down his head with his hat over his eyes. I stooped down and looked him in the face, he looked at me stern.

“They both went into Dorset Street, I followed them. They both stood at the corner of the court for about 3 minutes. He said something to her, she said, 'Alright my dear, come along, you will be comfortable.' He then placed his arm on her shoulder and gave her a kiss; she said she had lost her handkerchief. He then pulled his handkerchief, a red one, out and gave it to her. They both then went up the court together.

“I then went to the court to see if I could see them, but could not. I stood there for about three quarters of an hour to see if they came out, they did not, so I went away. The man was about, 5ft 6" in height and 34 or 35 years of age, with a dark complexion and dark moustache turned up at the ends. Wearing a long Astrakhan coat, a white collar with black necktie, in which was affixed a horseshoe pin. He wore a pair of dark spats with light buttons over button boots and displayed from his waistcoat a massive gold chain. His watch chain had a big seal with a red stone hanging from it. He had a heavy moustache curled up, and dark eyes and eyelashes, he had no side whiskers and his chin was clean-shaven. He looked like a foreigner. He carried a small parcel in his hand, about 8 inches long and it had a strap round it, he had it tightly grasped in his left hand, it looked as though it was covered in dark American cloth. He carried in his right hand, which he laid upon the woman's shoulder, a pair of brown kid gloves. One thing I noticed, and that was that he walked very softly. I believe that he lives in the

neighbourhood and I fancied that I saw him in Petticoat Lane on Sunday morning, but I was not certain."

It is a very detailed statement, which I would suggest doesn't stand up to close scrutiny. As well as Hutchinson hearing every word spoken between the two, he goes to great lengths to give such great detail about the man and items of clothing the man was wearing and also the jewellery the man was wearing, despite very poor street lighting around Miller's Court.

The statement of Hutchinson has raised a doubt amongst researchers for many years. Was he there or did he make it up, and if he did make it up for what purpose? There are a number of different ways of looking at Hutchinson and his statement. The first was why it took him so long to come forward with his statement. Was he afraid that the police might think he was the killer? If that were the case then why bother to come forward at all? It could be that he was telling the truth about what he saw, and remarkable as it may seem, gave us the best eyewitness description we have of Jack the Ripper.

The second way is that he was in fact telling the truth, but his statement was exaggerated to please the press and the police. The third, which I don't believe for one moment is that he lied and was in fact himself her killer.

He noticed the man was well dressed and looked wealthy and hung around waiting for the man to appear on his own, was that with the intention of robbing him? Perhaps the reason he hung around so long was that it was Mary Kelly he was keeping an eye on, and was besotted with her, possibly even stalking her. She had previously said to friends that she was frightened of someone other than the Ripper, though did not say who.

He could have had nowhere else to go and hung around for so long because he had no money for a bed and was just passing time. He had told Kelly that he had spent all his money going down to Romford.

After his initial disclosure to the police Hutchinson elaborated on his statement in a little more detail to the press, saying that his suspicions were aroused by seeing the man so well dressed, though had no suspicion the man was the murderer. He stated that he reported what he had seen on Sunday morning to a policeman. This fact has never been proved.

Despite Hutchinson claiming to harbour no suspicion against the man, and maintaining his curiosity was aroused by seeing such a well dressed individual in the area, he immediately contradicts this statement by saying, *"I believe he lives in the area"*.

Other reasons why his statement may be false are that he described, amongst other things, the colour of the suspect's eyelashes and the colour of the stone on the watch chain the man was wearing. All of these things would be very difficult to see in poor lighting conditions.

In an effort to prove or disprove his story I carried out a controlled experiment using three different coloured pendants. I used a volunteer to wear each one separately in poor lighting conditions and asked the volunteer to walk past me. I was unable to distinguish the different colours, all dark colours i.e. red and blue and black, all looked the same under my controlled lighting test. So I would say that Hutchinson's statement in its entirety should not be relied upon. I also believe the police also had their doubts but due to the fact their investigation up until that time had proved negative they had no choice other than to initially accept and act upon his statement.

In his original statement to the police, Hutchinson described the man he had seen as, *"Jewish in appearance"*, this was later changed to, *"looked like a foreigner"*, in an attempt to avoid stirring up any anti-Jewish feelings, as hostility and anger against the local Jewish population was already running high.

Hutchinson was paid the equivalent of a month's wages by the police for his help in searching for his Ripper suspect; he was also paid by the press for his story. Could this be the real reason why he was so keen to help and perhaps why he elaborated on his statement or totally fabricated the whole story?

The short inquest into Mary Kelly's death was opened and closed on 12th November 1888 by Dr. McDonald the coroner. The press expressed their surprise at the sudden termination of the proceedings before all the witnesses had a chance to come forward.

Dr. Bagster Phillips was the first doctor to attend the murder location his inquest testimony is: *"I am, divisional surgeon of police I was called by the*

police on Friday morning at eleven o'clock, and on proceeding to Miller's-court, which I entered at 11.15, I found a room, the door of which led out of the passage at the side of 26, Dorset-street, photographs of which I produce. It had two windows in the court. Two panes in the lesser window were broken, and as the door was locked I looked through the lower of the broken panes and satisfied myself that the mutilated corpse lying on the bed was not in need of any immediate attention from me, and I also came to the conclusion that there was nobody else upon the bed, or within view, to whom I could render any professional assistance. Having ascertained that probably it was advisable that no entrance should be made into the room at that time, I remained until about 1.30pm; when the door was broken open by McCarthy, under the direction of Superintendent Arnold. On the door being opened it knocked against a table, which was close to the left-hand side of the bedstead, and the bedstead was close against the wooden partition. The mutilated remains of a woman were lying two-thirds over, towards the edge of the bedstead, nearest the door. Deceased had only an under-linen garment upon her, and by subsequent examination I am sure the body had been removed, after the injury which caused death, from that side of the bedstead which was nearest to the wooden partition previously mentioned. The large quantity of blood under the bedstead, the saturated condition of the palliasse, pillow, and sheet at the top corner of the bedstead nearest to the partition leads me to the conclusion that the severance of the right carotid artery, which was the immediate cause of death, was inflicted while the deceased was lying at the right side of the bedstead and her head and neck in the top right-hand corner."

Dr. Thomas Bond also attended the murder location and subsequently conducted the post-mortem. However, he was never called as a witness due to the coroner deciding to conclude the inquest before other witnesses were called. His report was lost/stolen and mysteriously returned to the police in 1987. His report on his initial examination and his subsequent post-mortem examination is as follow. However, it should be noted that it appears to be incomplete with the final page or pages missing:

"The body was lying naked in the middle of the bed, the shoulders flat, but the axis of the body inclined to the left side of the bed. The head was turned on the left cheek. The left arm was close to the body with the forearm flexed at a right angle & lying across the abdomen. The right arm was

slightly abducted from the body & rested on the mattress, the elbow bent & the forearm supine with the fingers clenched. The legs were wide apart, the left thigh at right angles to the trunk & the right forming an obtuse angle with the pubes.

"The whole of the surface of the abdomen & thighs was removed & the abdominal cavity emptied of its viscera. The breasts were cut off, the arms mutilated by several jagged wounds & the face hacked beyond recognition of the features. The tissues of the neck were severed all round down to the bone.

"The viscera were found in various parts viz: the uterus & kidneys with one breast under the head, the other breast by the right foot, the liver between the feet, the intestines by the right side & the spleen by the left side of the body. The flaps removed from the abdomen and thighs were on a table.

"The bed clothing at the right corner was saturated with blood, & on the floor beneath was a pool of blood covering about 2 feet square. The wall by the right side of the bed & in a line with the neck was marked by blood, which had struck it in a number of separate splashes."

Post-mortem examination: *"The face was gashed in all directions the nose cheeks, eyebrows and ears being partly removed. The lips were blanched & cut by several incisions running obliquely down to the chin. There were also numerous cuts extending irregularly across all the features.*

"The neck was cut through the skin & other tissues right down to the vertebrae the 5th & 6th being deeply notched. The skin cuts in the front of the neck showed distinct ecchymosis.

"The air passage was cut at the lower part of the larynx through the cricoid cartilage.

"Both breasts were removed by more or less circular incisions, the muscles down to the ribs being attached to the breasts. The intercostals between the 4th, 5th & 6th ribs were cut through & the contents of the thorax visible through the openings.

"The skin & tissues of the abdomen from the costal arch to the pubes were removed in three large flaps. The right thigh was denuded in front to

the bone, the flap of skin, including the external organs of generation & part of the right buttock. The left thigh was stripped of skin, fascia & muscles as far as the knee.

"The left calf showed a long gash through skin & tissues to the deep muscles & reaching from the knee to 5ins above the ankle.

"Both arms & forearms had extensive & jagged wounds.

"The right thumb showed a small superficial incision about 1 in long, with extravasations of blood in the skin & there were several abrasions on the back of the hand moreover showing the same condition.

"On opening the thorax it was found that the right lung was minimally adherent by old firm adhesions. The lower part of the lung was broken & torn away.

"The left lung was intact: it was adherent at the apex & there were a few adhesions over the side. In the substances of the lung were several nodules of consolidation.

"The pericardium was open below & the heart absent.

"In the abdominal cavity was some partially digested food of fish & potatoes & similar food was found in the remains of the stomach attached to the intestines."

He states the heart was absent but it has never been made clear as to if the heart was absent from the room or simply absent from the pericardium. This is an important issue and has been the subject of many discussions amongst Ripper researchers over the years. It was also reported that Kelly's room was revisited later that day and the contents of the fire grate examined, as it was believed that some of the organs had been burnt. However, there is no official confirmation of this. I have set out below extracts from several newspapers of the day who reported on the question of the missing organs.

The Echo, 10th November 1888...

"The investigation made by the doctors yesterday was not the final one, mainly because the room was ill-adapted for the purpose of carrying out a complete autopsy. The post-mortem examination-in-chief was only

commenced this morning, at the early hour of half-past seven, when Dr. Phillips, Dr. Bond, Dr. Hibbert, and other experts attended. Some portions of the body are missing, and, says an Echo reporter, writing at two o'clock this afternoon, Dr. Phillips and Dr. Bond, accompanied by Inspector Moore, Inspector Abberline, and Inspector Reid, are again paying a visit to Miller's-court, in order to examine the ashes found in the grate, as it is thought small parts of the body may have been burnt."

The Times 10th November

"The latest account states upon what professes to be indisputable authority that no portion of the woman's body was taken away by the murderer. As already stated, the post-mortem examination was of the most exhaustive character, and surgeons did not quit their work until every organ had been accounted for and placed as closely as possible in its natural position."

The Echo 12th November

"Nothing of any importance was discovered in the ashes at the deceased's house. A small portion only of the remains is missing, while it is noticeable as a special incident in the barbarous murder that the organ hitherto taken away at the mutilations was found in the room, although it had been cut out of the body..."

The Times 12th November

"As early as half past 7 on Saturday morning, Dr. Phillips, assisted by Dr. Bond (Westminster), Dr. Gordon Brown (City), Dr. Duke (Spitalfields) and his (Dr. Phillips') assistant, made an exhaustive post-mortem examination of the body at the mortuary adjoining Whitechapel Church. It is known that after Dr. Phillips "fitted" the cut portions of the body into their proper places no portion was missing. At the first examination, which was only of a cursory character, it was thought that a portion of the body had gone, but this is not the case. The examination was most minutely made, and lasted upwards of 2 ½ hours after which the mutilated portions were sewn to the body, and therefore the coroner's jury will be spared the unpleasant duty of witnessing the horrible spectacle presented to those who discovered the murder. The ashes found in the fireplace of the room rented by the deceased woman were also submitted to a searching examination,

but nothing likely to throw any light on this shocking case could be gleaned from them."

On 25th October 1888, Sir Robert Anderson had written to Dr. Bond asking him to examine material connected with the Jack the Ripper investigation. In his letter Anderson enclosed copies of the evidence given at the inquests into the murders of Polly Nichols, Annie Chapman, Elizabeth Stride and Catherine Eddowes, and asked Bond to deliver his "opinion on the matter."

Bond examined the papers for two weeks and replied to Anderson on 10th November, 1888. Mary Jane Kelly had been killed the morning before in Dorset Street, and Bond had spent much of that day performing her autopsy.

Bond's report said:

"I beg to report that I have read the notes of the 4 Whitechapel murders viz:

1. Buck's Row.

2. Hanbury Street.

3. Berner Street.

4. Mitre Square.

"I have also made a Post-Mortem Examination of the mutilated remains of a woman found yesterday in a small room in Dorset Street –

"All five murders were no doubt committed by the same hand. In the first four the throats appear to have been cut from left to right. In the last case owing to the extensive mutilation it is impossible to say in what direction the fatal cut was made, but arterial blood was found on the wall in splashes close to where the woman's head must have been lying.

"All the circumstances surrounding the murders lead me to form the opinion that the women must have been lying down when murdered and in every case the throat was first cut. 3 in the four murders of which I have seen the notes only, I cannot form a very definite opinion as to the time that had elapsed between the murder and the discovering of the body.

"In one case, that of Berner Street, the discovery appears to have been made immediately after the deed - In Buck's Row, Hanbury Street, and Mitre Square three or four hours only could have elapsed. In the Dorset Street case the body was lying on the bed at the time of my visit, 2 o'clock, quite naked and mutilated as in the annexed report –

"Rigor Mortis had set in, but increased during the progress of the examination. From this it is difficult to say with any degree of certainty the exact time that had elapsed since death as the period varies from 6 to 12 hours before rigidity sets in. The body was comparatively cold at 2 o'clock and the remains of a recently taken meal were found in the stomach and scattered about over the intestines. It is, therefore, pretty certain that the woman must have been dead about 12 hours and the partly digested food would indicate: that death took place about 3 or 4 hours after the food was taken, so one or two o'clock in the morning would be the probable time of the murder.

"In all the cases there appears to be no evidence of struggling and the attacks were probably so sudden and made in such a position that the women could neither resist nor cry out. In the Dorset Street case the corner of the sheet to the right of the woman's head was much cut and saturated with blood, indicating that the face may have been covered with the sheet at the time of the attack.

"In the four first cases the murderer must have attacked from the right side of the victim. In the Dorset Street case, he must have attacked from in front or from the left, as there would be no room for him between the wall and the part of the bed on which the woman was lying. Again, the blood had flowed down on the right side of the woman and spurted on to the wall.

"The murderer would not necessarily be splashed or deluged with blood, but his hands and arms must have been covered and parts of his clothing must certainly have been smeared with blood.

"The mutilations in each case excepting the Berner's Street one were all of the same character and showed clearly that in all the murders, the object was mutilation.

"In each case the mutilation was inflicted by a person who had no scientific nor anatomical knowledge. In my opinion he does not even

possess the technical knowledge of a butcher or horse slaughterer or any person accustomed to cut up dead animals.

"The instrument must have been a strong knife at least six inches long, very sharp, pointed at the top and about an inch in width. It may have been a clasp knife, a butcher's knife or a surgeon's knife. I think it was no doubt a straight knife.

"The murderer must have been a man of physical strength and of great coolness and daring. There is no evidence that he had an accomplice. He must in my opinion be a man subject to periodical attacks of Homicidal and erotic mania. The character of the mutilations indicates that the man may be in a condition sexually, that may be called satyriasis. It is of course possible that the Homicidal impulse may have developed from a revengeful or brooding condition of the mind, or that Religious Mania may have been the original disease, but I do not think either hypothesis is likely. The murderer in external appearance is quite likely to be a quiet inoffensive looking man probably middle aged and neatly and respectably dressed. I think he must be in the habit of wearing a cloak or overcoat or he could hardly have escaped notice in the streets if the blood on his hands or clothes were visible.

"Assuming the murderer to be such a person as I have just described he would probably be solitary and eccentric in his habits, also he is most likely to be a man without regular occupation, but with some small income or pension. He is possibly living among respectable persons who have some knowledge of his character and habits and who may have grounds for suspicion that he is not quite right in his mind at times. Such persons would probably be unwilling to communicate suspicions to the Police for fear of trouble or notoriety, whereas if there were a prospect of reward it might overcome their scruples.

I am, Dear Sir,

Yours faithfully,

Thos. Bond.

As can be seen Dr. Bond believed that the killer of all the victims did not show any anatomical knowledge. This again adds even more weight to my

theory that the killer simply killed and mutilated Kelly and was not responsible for removing the organs from Eddowes and Chapman. He also makes no mention of the organ removals and the taking away of them.

In support of my theory it should also be noted that the bodies of Chapman and Eddowes were taken to two different mortuaries. If it is suggested that the killer removed the organs one must ask why after removing the uterus from Chapman did he want another from Eddowes. As my investigation unfolded, it will be seen from later medical evidence that both of the victim's uteri were removed in two different ways, suggesting that two different persons removed those organs neither being responsible for the murders.

The Mary Kelly murder is one of the more intriguing murders in this series simply because of the questions which remain unanswered to this day. Was Mary Kelly killed by the same hand as the other Whitechapel victims? There are some facts which would suggest she was:

- She was a prostitute, as were the other victims.
- She was murdered in Whitechapel, as were the other victims.
- Her body was subjected to savage mutilations, as were the other victims.

However the facts against her being killed by the same killer are:

- She was murdered inside; all the others were murdered outside.
- No anatomical knowledge was displayed by the killer in cutting out her organs and none removed from crime scene. (This as stated supports my theory in relation to the removal of organs from Eddowes and Chapman.)

In fact my good friend and Ripper expert Stewart Evans reminded me that even the detectives who worked on the Kelly murder had their doubts as to whether or not she was a Ripper victim. This information originally came from Bernard Davis whose grandfather was a police officer attached to Whitechapel Division during the murders. Some of the detectives told him that they didn't think that the Kelly murder was the work of the Ripper.

However, this is not recorded anywhere but is verbal information given to Bernard by his grandfather.

So if Mary Kelly was not a victim of Jack the Ripper then who murdered her and what was the reason for making it appear she was a murdered by the Ripper? Was it a crime of passion committed by her estranged partner Joseph Barnett? However, this idea lacks a real motive. Although they had been separated for some time, Barnett was obviously still fond of her as he visited her once a week and on those occasions gave her money. There is no record of any ill feeling or bad blood between them either from what he told police or what police was able to gather from witnesses who knew them. So is there a more sinister theory surrounding her murder?

There has always been a question mark hanging over Mary Kelly and her true identity, where she came from, and what she had been doing prior to her arriving in Whitechapel. She was also known as Marie Jeanette Kelly, and Mary Ann Kelly. It was not uncommon for prostitutes to use several different names. Catherine Eddowes used the aliases of Mary Kelly and Kate Kelly. Polly Nichols' real name was Mary Ann Nichols. Annie Chapman used Annie Siffey or Sievey. Elizabeth Stride was also known as Long Liz, Martha Tabram used the name Emma Turner, Alice McKenzie used Emma Bryant and Frances Coles used the names of Frances Hawkins and Frances Coleman.

All of what is documented about Kelly came from what she had told Joseph Barnett during their relationship between 1886 and 1888. She told him she was born in Limerick, Ireland. She stated that at a very young age she moved with her family to Wales.

Her father was John Kelly who worked apparently in a steelworks in Caernarfonshire. She claimed to have 6 or 7 brothers and one sister. She says that one brother, Henry, whose nickname is Johnto was a soldier in the 2nd Battalion Scots Guards stationed in Dublin, Ireland.

At the age of 16 she apparently married a collier named Davies. He was supposedly killed in a mining explosion several years later. Kelly moved to Cardiff and lived with a cousin and started work as a prostitute. She had stated she became very ill and spent the best part of the time in an infirmary.

She then came to London in 1884 taking up work as a charwoman. Barnett stated that there came a point in time when she told him that she went to work in a high-class brothel in the West End. She says that during this time she frequently rode in a carriage and accompanied one gentleman to Paris, which she didn't like and she returned. On returning she turned to drink and prostitution before meeting Barnett in 1886.

John McCarthy, landlord at Miller's Court, told police that she received a letter from her mother in Ireland and also her brother. However, there are conflicting issues with Barnett who says that she never corresponded with her family. In another report he is stated as saying she did correspond with her brother who was in the army. Despite all of this, not one family member attended her funeral or ever acknowledged her existence.

Many of the aforementioned facts surrounding Mary Kelly and her early life are impossible to prove or disprove. However, enquiries show that there is no record of a Henry Kelly serving in the Scots Guards during the 19th century. But there was a John Kelly who could have had the nickname, "Johnto" - in that regiment during the 1880s. He is shown as joining the regiment in 1876 and records show that he was discharged in Dublin in 1883. His next of kin was his brother Richard, who was in the Dublin Metropolitan Police from 1882 until 1909.

Mary Kelly told Barnett that the Scots Guards were serving in Ireland in 1888, but records show that both the regiment's battalions were in England during that year.

So was there a darker and sinister side to Mary Kelly and her early life? In the light of the lack of corroboration to what is currently known questions must be asked. One question revolves around two separate newspaper articles, which stated that later the same day that the body was discovered, Miller’s Court was visited by a number of prominent people including two Royal Irish Constabulary officers. Was it just morbid curiosity by the officers or was there another reason, and if so what was that reason?

There has always been a theory, which some researchers have advanced for many years. They suggest that Irish terrorist group the Fenians, who in addition to causing major disruptions in London by bombing buildings in

1888, were also behind some or all of the Whitechapel murders, in an attempt to force a major breakdown in the forces of law and order in London. I was later able to advance this theory following examination of another Metropolitan Police file from The National Archives. This is recorded under MEPO 18/1. The file in question is a crime record book, which contained details of internal police memos and files relating to enquiries and investigations. Some of these entries related to the Whitechapel murders although the dates of the files referred to and the entries are undated. One such entry read: *"Whitechapel Murders suggested complicity of Irish Party."* This entry related to an original file numbered 93867.

Was Kelly a specific target for this group, and if so why, did she have a much darker past? It does seem strange that officers from the Royal Irish Constabulary should have visited the murder location, and prior to this The Evening News printed an article on October 9th which read:

"The correspondent of the Irish Times states that a number of Irish constables have been withdrawn from Dublin for special duty in connection with the Whitechapel murders."

However following this a report was quickly sent out by the press association which read:

"The Press Association learns that there is no truth in the statement published to-day that Dublin detectives have gone to London to aid in discovering the Whitechapel murderer. Mr. John Mallow, the head of the Dublin detective force, is at present in London, but on business wholly disconnected with the East-end atrocities."

I am not the only the only person interested in the mystery surrounding Kelly's true identity and the suggestion that she may have had a darker past. Another Ripper researcher Maggy Ann Steel has suggested to me that her real name could in fact be Alice Carroll who was a witness in the trial of the five Phoenix Park murderers in Ireland in 1883. The murders were carried out by a group calling themselves "The Invincibles" and were a splinter group of "The Fenians". They murdered in Dublin in broad daylight Frederick Cavendish, Chief Secretary for Ireland and his deputy Thomas Burke, the under Secretary.

As a result of information given by informants and witnesses who were closely connected to the group, five men were subsequently convicted and hanged in 1883. These five were Joe Brady, Michael Fagan, Thomas Caffrey, Dan Curley and Tim Kelly.

Alice Carroll's specific evidence was against Brady and Kelly. For giving evidence the authorities gave her the sum of £500 and offered her a new identity. At the time of the trial in 1883 she was 17 years-old and therefore would have been twenty-two at the time of the Whitechapel murders. Mary Kelly was supposedly around twenty-five at the time of her murder according to Joseph Barnett.

Carroll was described as having bright, golden-red, hair and very pretty blue eyes, as did Kelly. Alice lived with her parents, two brothers and three sisters in Lower Eccles Lane, just off Dorset Street, Dublin. She used to regularly shop for her mother in Hardwick Street where there was a grocery store owned by the McCarthy's and another store owned by the Hutchinson's.

Joseph Brady one of the killers, had a girlfriend named Annie Meagher who hated and despised Carroll with a vengeance for giving evidence, which led to his execution. Following which she is quoted as saying to a witness, *"The sun has gone from my sky and the heart has been torn from my body."* She was also claimed to have verbally abused Alice Carroll using words along the lines of, *"I hope someday your heart is torn from you as has mine."*

Alice Carroll had a hard time in Dublin. The murders and the subsequent executions had caused concern and she felt safer to stay at home with her mother. She was abused constantly on the streets. On one occasion there was an effigy of her burnt near her home. She remained in the family home for a few years after the trial and her last known whereabouts were that she was still in Dublin in 1887 having been arrested for being drunk.

Could Alice Carroll have finally decided to leave Ireland and assume the new identity of Mary Kelly in Whitechapel? Was John McCarthy her landlord who ran a local shop taking in mail from Ireland for her, related to the same McCarthy who owned the shop near to where she lived in Ireland? Was the story of her early life, which she gave to Barnett, made-up?

According to uncorroborated reports, following the execution of Brady and Kelly their bodies were the subject of dissection with all of their organs being removed for medical research, and their remains buried in unmarked graves inside Dublin Prison. This certainly gives food for thought in relation to the murder of Mary Kelly and certainly raises a motive.

Were Alice Carroll and Mary Kelly one and the same and her true identity uncovered by the Fenians who then inflicted revenge on her by murdering and mutilating her, removing all of her organs and in particular the heart, making it look like the work of Jack the Ripper?

If Mary Kelly and Alice Carroll were one and the same she was not the only witness in the Phoenix Park murder trial to be subsequently murdered by the Fenians. James Carey was another who turned Queen's evidence. After the trial the authorities had no use for Carey, but it was incumbent on them to make some provision for his safety by getting him out of Ireland. The problem was finding a safe haven in the English-speaking parts of the world as the USA and Canada, the Australian colonies; New Zealand and the Cape Colony had too many Fenian sympathizers for safety. So Natal was chosen, where the Irish were few.

Carey’s wife and seven children were put into lodgings in the East End of London and Carey was kept in Kilmainham Gaol until arrangements had been completed. Then Mrs. Carey and five of the children were put aboard the *Kinfauns Castle* in London as steerage passengers and Carey and the two eldest children joined the ship at Dartmouth, all of them travelling as a family under the name Power, bound for Cape Town on the first stage of their journey.

But word of their new life had been leaked to Fenian sympathizers who booked Patrick O'Donnell on the same ship, and when the ship reached its destination he killed James Carey with three shots from a revolver. O'Donnell was brought back to London and later hanged for the murder after a trial at the Old Bailey.

I have to admit I find all of this surrounding the death of Mary Kelly an interesting theory and there are many coincidences in this theory but coincidences do not solve mysteries or murders.

Following the Kelly murder the Police Commissioner Sir Charles Warren issued the following pardon:

MURDER. - PARDON. - Whereas on November 8 or 9, in Miller-court, Dorset-street, Spitalfields, Mary Janet Kelly was murdered by some person or persons unknown: the Secretary of State will advise the grant of Her Majesty's gracious pardon to any accomplice, not being a person who contrived or actually committed the murder, who shall give such information and evidence as shall lead to the discovery and conviction of the person or persons who committed the murder.

CHARLES WARREN,

The Commissioner of Police of the Metropolis.
Metropolitan Police office, 4, Whitehall-place, S.W., Nov. 10th 1888.

Needless to say no one came forward with any information and soon afterwards Sir Charles Warren resigned his post to be replaced by James Monro.

Mary Kelly is said to have been the last of the Ripper's victims. But as earlier stated my investigation revealed two other subsequent murders of prostitutes in the Whitechapel area that are worthy of consideration in deciding whether the Ripper continued his killing spree after Kelly.

ALICE McKENZIE

Forty-year-old Alice McKenzie died in Castle Alley on 17th July 1889 of wounds to the left side of her neck. Her abdomen showed signs of only superficial mutilations. Her clothes were up around her chin. She was last seen alive at 11.40pm and her body was found at 12.50am in the same alley that a police officer later stated he patrolled some twenty minutes before this time and saw no one or nothing suspicious. Two doctors agreed that a "sharp-pointed knife" was used to inflict the wounds, but also that it could have been smaller than the one used in the previous killings. However, neither the doctors nor the police could agree on whether she was a Ripper victim.

My ability to state conclusively that this murder was connected to the previous killings is not helped by the failure of the two doctors and the police all failing to agree. However, in the light of my theory as to how and

when the organs were removed from the earlier victims, I believe Alice McKenzie could have been a Ripper victim.

FRANCES COLES

Twenty-three-year-old Frances Coles was the last possible UK Ripper victim and perhaps the prettiest of them all. She was murdered in the early hours of 13th February 1891 under a railway arch in Royal Mint Street. Her throat was slashed only moments before a policeman arrived on the scene. There were no abdominal mutilations. She had injuries to the back of her head consistent with being thrown to the pavement and her throat had been cut while she was lying on the pavement. The policeman who discovered the body heard footsteps walking away, but police rules required that he stayed with the body, as she appeared to be still alive. Had the officer followed the footsteps, he may have caught the murderer.

Coles was last seen alive at 1.45am and found dying at 2.15am. At 1.45am she had met fellow prostitute Ellen Gallagher in Commercial Street, passing “a violent man in a cheese cutter hat”. Apparently Gallagher remembered the man as a former client who had given her a black eye and warned Coles not to entertain him, but Coles ignored her friend’s advice and solicited the man. She and the stranger headed toward the direction of the Minories. This was the last time she was seen alive. It appears that the police carried out no enquiries in an effort to identify this man.

Was Frances Coles a Ripper victim? Her throat was cut, but unlike in the other Whitechapel murders a blunt knife was used. There seems to have been no evidence of strangulation. There was no mutilation of the abdomen and the clothes were not disarranged. The murder location, as in the case of Elizabeth Stride, was south of Whitechapel Road. Could the Ripper have ceased his onslaught for eight months and then resumed his slayings with Frances Coles? Or was she just another victim of the violent Whitechapel at that time? My initial impression is that her murder is perhaps not connected to any of the others, but during the latter part of my investigation I uncovered supportive evidence, which suggests she, and all the other victims I have mentioned with the exception of Liz Stride could have possibly all been victims of the same killer.

It should be noted that a seaman James Sadler who was an acquaintance of Coles was arrested in connection with her murder. The case was

investigated by Chief Inspector Donald Swanson who not only suspected Sadler of her murder but suggested that Sadler could have been Jack the Ripper. The case against Sadler was dropped when he produced a cast iron alibi for his movements at the time of her murder, and also the previous murders. At this early stage of my investigation it gave me a clear indication that the police did not have any clues as to the identity of Jack the Ripper three years after the first murder took place.

Before considering any likely suspects I had to see if there was any direct evidence I could use after analysing the murders that would help me to identify the killer. There was none. All I had to go on were vague unreliable descriptions of men seen with some of the victims before their deaths and the MOs – the *modus operandi*, or method of killing used in each murder. As I looked at each suspect my aim was to see if any of them matched any of these descriptions, but, even if they did, I knew that this fact would be no more than weak circumstantial evidence. In reality these assortment of descriptions was of no help.

CHAPTER FOUR

THE SUSPECTS

The list of Ripper “suspects” now stands at over 200. Among such illustrious names put forward through the years are Lewis Carroll the famous children’s writer, and Dr. Barnardo, who did so much good work for orphaned children and in more recent times it has been suggested the killer may have been a woman and therefore aptly named “Jill the Ripper”.

So why is there such a long list? Well in addition to unsubstantiated theories in later years regarding likely suspects, it seems that at the time anyone who had a conviction for a stabbing offence or offering violence towards a female became a suspect, as did anyone confessing to being Jack the Ripper after a night of heavy drinking or anyone coming into police custody for any similar type of murder. So the list grew and grew. For several years after the murders ceased police still continued to interview anyone arrested for any offence involving the use of a sharp knife being used against a female in the hope of finding Jack the Ripper.

One has to bear in mind that in 1888 the police did not have the benefit of modern-day forensics and scientific methods, which are afforded to our officers today. The only way the police could secure a conviction was:

1. To find the offender committing the crime.
2. To have sufficient witnesses who saw the offender committing the crime.
3. To have a suspect make a full and frank confession to having committed the crime in this case the following guidelines were applicable: The Police Codes of the day, set out below expands on the issue of confessions to avoid miscarriages of justice.

“Any confession made to police should be at once reduced to writing, signed, if possible, by the person making it, and witnessed by an officer.

“A person should, therefore, never be charged with an offence on his own confession before inquiry has been made as to its reliability.”

In many criminal cases circumstantial evidence played a great part in prosecutions, this is defined as:

1. *“Evidence not of the actual fact to be proved, but of circumstances from which that fact can be inferred with more or less certainty.”*
2. *“Direct testimony is in all cases preferable, but in criminal cases, and especially in murder, where the act can rarely be proved directly, circumstantial evidence is often found to produce a strong assurance of the prisoner's guilt.”*

To give an example as to the use of circumstantial evidence – The body of a woman is discovered, she has been stabbed repeatedly; there is no sign of the offender or the weapon used. Some 20 minutes later and half a mile away a man is stopped in the street he has blood on his hands and when searched he is found to be in possession of a long-bladed knife, which has traces of blood on the blade. If he gives no explanation or not even a plausible explanation for the blood on himself and the knife and as likely as not would be charged solely on that evidence the court would be able to use that evidence and draw an inference as to his guilt.

Before discussing specific “suspects” I will take time to expand and define the term “suspect” thereby giving readers and researchers alike the ability to assess and evaluate the viability of their favoured “suspect” because the vast majority of the suspects on the list do not fit into any of the categories shown below.

I would define “Suspect” as “*A person who by their own actions or by their spoken or written words or conduct, arouses suspicion by others having regard to their likely involvement in the commission of an offence.”*

That now leaves three specific subcategories within the suspect category:

“*A person who is of interest”*

“A likely suspect”

“A prime suspect”

A person of interest is self-explanatory and could be explained in many different ways. Firstly by a member of the public or the relative of a person giving the name of that person to the police by reason of unfounded

personal suspicions they had against that person. Another example could be by the police themselves coming up with a name via their investigation, perhaps someone who was known to carry a knife or had been convicted of a knife offence, or someone who had assaulted a prostitute.

These type of incidents occurred many times during the murders. The police were also constantly in receipt of letters from the public providing names of likely suspects with an assortment of reasons why that person or persons was suspected.

An example of a likely suspect might be a male person who comes to the notice of the police in the following way; Mrs. Smith is the owner of a common lodging house right in the heart of Whitechapel. She takes in a male lodger who keeps himself to himself and doesn't talk or discusses his private life, or discloses anything about himself. He leaves the lodging house late at night and comes back in the early hours of the morning carrying a parcel.

Mrs. Smith being aware of the murders contacts the police suggesting that her lodger could be the killer. This man at this point in time would be looked upon as a "likely suspect". The police would then want to enquire further into the man. It is highly unlikely that they would make a move to arrest him. They would likely as not either follow him one night or simply go and speak to him. In this example the police enquiries revealed that the man worked at a night bakery thus eliminating him from further suspicion. The information initially received from Mrs. Smith would have been recorded and would have shown him to have been a "*likely suspect*".

The second main "suspect" category is that of "prime suspect".

For a person to be elevated to that status the following criteria might have applied:

The "suspect" lived in Whitechapel, the police believed the killer to live locally.

The "suspect" fits the description of the offender.

The "suspect" was known to carry a knife, or had convictions involving the use of a knife.

The "suspect" had convictions for violent assaults on women.

The "suspect" associated with prostitutes.

The "suspect" having been spoken to could not give a satisfactory account as to where he was or who he was with on the dates of the murders.

Over the years the main list of "prime suspects" has come down to the following:

George Chapman, Montague Druitt, Aaron Kosminski, Prince Albert Victor, Francis Tumblety, Joseph Barnett, Walter Sickert, John Pizer, Michael Ostrog, James Maybrick and Thomas Cutbush.

I would conduct a lengthy investigation into the aforementioned names in an attempt to prove or disprove their suggested involvement in the murders. I would also review the "*evidence"* already in existence, which researchers have been using to prove the viability of these suspects.

The difficulty I faced was that with the exception of Pizer none of the others were ever arrested and interviewed at the time of the murders. Most were suggested years afterwards. Some of them were allegedly suspected by investigating officers but these suspicions came in later years. As to how they came to be suspected and whether there is any substance to the suspicions I hoped my investigation would prove fruitful.

I went as far as to write to Her Majesty, Queen Elizabeth for leave to examine letters and correspondence within the Royal Archives. She was most helpful instructing the Royal Archives to forward me copies of several letters between Queen Victoria and Lord Salisbury relating to the murders, in addition to a detailed list as to the whereabouts of Prince Albert Victor, Duke of Clarence and Avondale at the time of the murders.

Unfortunately the letters revealed nothing other than the concern Queen Victoria had over the murders. One thing these letters also revealed was that even in Victorian days the need for secrecy was as important then as it still is today. The letters showed that whoever the writer was whether it was Queen Victoria or Lord Salisbury they were always written in code and then decoded on receipt. I also suspect that should there have been any sensitive material contained in any of the letters there would have been a final paragraph stating, "*After reading please destroy"*. So realistically my new

lines of enquiry were always likely to prove negative but, nevertheless, they had to be done.

An official from the Royal Archives did point me in the direction of the archives of Lord Salisbury at Hatfield House who was prime minister at the time of the murders. I ascertained that no previous researchers had taken this route so I was more than hopeful that there would be in existence letters and other documents between Lord Salisbury, Queen Victoria and the Home Secretary, Henry Matthews, which would reveal new evidence or clues on the murders. There was an important letter and statement found, which I will refer to in due course.

It was now time to look at each suspect individually. The first suspect I looked at was:

MONTAGUE JOHN DRUITT

Aged 31 at time of the murders Druitt was a barrister and a teacher. He was put forward as a likely suspect in 1894 along with two others, Michael Ostrog and a Jewish man referred to by surname only as Kosminski. These I will discuss later. The names appeared in a confidential memorandum in 1894 compiled by Sir Melville Macnaghten who joined the Metropolitan Police as Assistant Chief Constable, second in command of the Criminal Investigation Department (C.I.D.) at Scotland Yard in June 1889. The aforementioned “likely” suspects were named in his now famous but highly contentious memorandum dated 23rd February 1894. A document, which has now been proved to be unsafe and inaccurate. There is no evidence of contemporary police suspicion against any of the suspects at the time of the murders. I will discuss the memorandum and its evidential value in due course.

Macnaghten was not involved in the investigation of any of the murders. But as a senior police officer in later years he would have been aware of ongoing enquiries in relation to the murders. He would have had access to files relating to all “suspects” who had come to the notice of police at the time of the murders and those who came to notice after the murders ceased. Those files would also have contained the results of those enquiries which had been conducted by a handful of officers, who initially investigated the murders at the time and those who continued the search for Jack the Ripper long after the murders ceased.

Sir Melville Macnaghten referred to Montague Druitt in the following quote:

“I have always held strong opinions regarding him, and the more I think the matter over, the stronger do these opinions become. The truth, however, will never be known, and did indeed, at one time lie at the bottom of the Thames, if my conjectures be correct!

“Mr. M. J. Druitt a doctor of about 41 years of age & of fairly good family, who disappeared at the time of the Miller's Court murder, and whose body was found floating in the Thames on 31st Dec: i.e. 7 weeks after the said murder. The body was said to have been in the water for a month, or more -- on it was found a season ticket between Blackheath & London. From private information I have little doubt that his own family suspected this man of being the Whitechapel murderer; it was alleged that he was sexually insane.”

When Macnaghten says in the memoranda, *"from private information I have little doubt but that his own family believed him to have been the murderer,"* I looked closely at the content of that statement. It is obvious he has no evidence at all other than hearsay. There are no clues as to whom the informant was whom Macnaghten refers to, but from the way he words his statement, it would seem as if it was a Druitt family member. Yet if one of Druitt’s relations had informed Macnaghten that they believed he might have been the Ripper, would Macnaghten not have said he has evidence that Druitt's family believe him to be the killer?

The memorandum does not stand up to close scrutiny in any event. With regards to Druitt I found many discrepancies in Macnaghten’s notes regarding Druitt. He stated that Druitt lived with his family, but records show that he lived alone at 9, Elliot Place. He stated that Druitt had committed suicide around the 10th of November, three weeks before he committed suicide. Although this is not confirmed, when the body was examined only an approximate time of the suicide was given due to the effects of decomposition due to it being in the water for a long period of time. He also stated that Druitt was about 41 at the time of his death, when in fact he was only 31. Finally, he mentions Druitt as being a doctor, when he was a barrister and schoolmaster.

As to Druitt’s description. Some witnesses report the person suspected of being the Ripper as having a moustache, which Druitt had. He was also of respectable appearance, always known to have been well dressed. One witness described a suspect as having the appearance of a sailor. Another described seeing a man of “shabby genteel appearance” others described the man as respectable.

However, my theory that the killer did not live in Whitechapel could not totally rule him out as he was living at 9, Elliot Place, Blackheath during the murders. If he were the killer he could have used that address as a "base" for the murders. However, this address is a long way from Whitechapel, too far to walk and would have necessitated a train journey or a ride in a horse-drawn cab. Or, alternatively he could have used his barrister’s chambers at King’s Bench Walk, which were a walking distance away from Whitechapel and in the direction the killer is alleged to have taken after killing Eddowes.

In the defence of Druitt he was a keen cricketer and was known to have played cricket down in Dorset on September 1st, the day after Nichols' murder. Could he have had time to commit the murder and be down in Dorset for the start of play midmorning? I suspect not.

On September 8th (day of Chapman's murder) Druitt also played cricket in Blackheath at 11.30am. So could he have killed Chapman at 5.30am and had time to catch a train to Blackheath, remove his bloodstained clothes, wash up, eat breakfast, and be on the cricket field by 11.30am, possible but highly unlikely.

Another issue with Druitt was the fact that he was believed to have been a homosexual and the reason for his dismissal from the boy’s school where he was employed was believed to have been as a result in him engaging in homosexual acts with boys, and the disgrace of this was the reason for his suicide. If it is accepted that he was homosexual then would a homosexual commit crimes against women in this brutal way? The answer is no.

The truth is that the only “evidence” to suggest he was the killer came out in 1894 and it can be said that this is not evidence in the true sense. So why were the investigating officers not made aware of this at the time by the person who initially suspected Druitt? I would have thought that anyone

with information leading to the apprehension of the killer would have been only too willing be a part of apprehending one of the most notorious killers that London had ever seen.

This leads me to believe that perhaps Macnaghten was basing his claims on simply hearsay and rumour, rather than actual private information he himself received. After all he was not appointed until 1889. Perhaps more evidence or documents will be found in the future, which may shed some light on Macnaghten suggesting Montague Druitt as being Jack the Ripper. After all Macnaghten apparently had stated that he had been in possession of other documentation regarding the murders and Druitt's involvement, which for reasons only known to him he had destroyed.

So was Druitt the killer? Well as has been documented there were two more Ripper like murders in 1889 and 1891 both of which the police believed were the work of the same killer as well as looking closely at another Ripper suspect in 1895. If it is accepted that the other two murders after Mary Kelly were not committed by the same killer/s then he cannot be discounted totally. However, if it is not accepted then he was not the killer of all or any of the women.

His suicide and the fact that the police closed the enquiry in early January make him a convenient scapegoat. However, I personally do not believe him to have been the killer of all or any of the women.

I can find no evidence or any motives to support the theory that Druitt was the Ripper. In fact, his only true link can be made in his appearance and his likeness to the vague descriptions and the suggestion made by an ageing police officer years later.

THOMAS CUTBUSH

Thomas Cutbush is the suspect who was responsible for Macnaghten compiling The Macnaghten Memorandum in 1894. Although described in the memorandum as a likely suspect Macnaghten does state:

"No one ever saw the Whitechapel murderer; many homicidal maniacs were suspected, but no shadow of proof could be thrown on any one. I may mention the cases of 3 men, any one of whom would have been more likely than Cutbush to have committed this series of murders.:"

In 1891 Cutbush was arrested and charged with maliciously wounding two women in Kennington, South East London. Prior to this he had been in the Lambeth infirmary suffering from delusions thought to have been caused by syphilis.

His crimes hardly came within the scope of anything compared to the Whitechapel murders. The two offences he committed were somewhat of a sexual nature having regard to the fact that he came up behind two women walking in the street carrying a long-bladed knife and proceeded to stab them in their backsides as they were walking along. He was arrested almost immediately still in possession of the knife, which it was later ascertained he had bought in Houndsditch a week before he was arrested. Following his arrest he was deemed to be insane and was sent to Broadmoor Hospital where he died in 1903.

So why did Macnaghten think fit to mention Cutbush? It was probably as a result of several articles, which appeared in The Sun newspaper in 1894 in which the press were suggesting that Cutbush could have been the Whitechapel murderer.

Little is known about Cutbush or his whereabouts at the time of the murders. He is said to have studied medical books by day, and to have walked the streets at night, returning frequently with his clothes covered with mud; but little reliance could be placed on these statements, which were made by his mother or his aunt, who both appear to have been of a very excitable disposition.

It was also reported that Cutbush had made rough drawings of the bodies of women, and of their mutilations. These were apparently found along with two scribble drawings of women in indecent poses in his room following his arrest. The head and body of one of these had been cut from some fashion plate, and legs were added to show a woman's naked thighs and pink stockings.

I think if the truth be known had it not been for The Sun newspaper article on Cutbush published in 1894 in which they suggested that Cutbush could have been the elusive Jack the Ripper, he may never have ever been looked upon as a Ripper suspect. However, the police had to then investigate him but could not connect him to the murders then, and I could

find nothing 125 years later to suggest he had any involvement in any of the murders either.

MICHAEL OSTROG

Ostrog was another suspect mentioned in the Macnaghten memorandum. It has been suggested that Ostrog came under scrutiny by the Metropolitan Police at the time of the Whitechapel murders. It is also said his whereabouts could never be satisfactorily accounted for.

Ostrog was a small-time petty criminal/confidence trickster who used numerous aliases, including that of a Dr. Grant, and also that he was a former surgeon in the Russian Navy. He spent much of his time in police custody for various fraudulent and thieving offences. Clearly he was a persistent offender but was he a killer? Ostrog became a “high profile” suspect when it was stated in the “Police Gazette” around the time of the murders that, “special attention is called to this dangerous man.”

The Police Gazette is a publication, which was sent to all police stations on a regular basis. It sets out details of either persons wanted by specific police officers for specific crimes, or highlights certain criminals who are suspected of being engaged in criminal activities.

In the case of Ostrog appearing in one of these publications, it could have been in relation to his petty criminal activities and the wording as to dangerous misconstrued. If he were suspected of being the killer or wanted for questioning as a suspect then this would have been written within the text. Looking at the number of times he was arrested for petty crimes, the police would have had ample opportunity to question him regarding the murders. It appears that this was never done.

Macnaghten wrote about him as follows:

“Michael Ostrog, a mad Russian doctor and a convict and unquestionably a homicidal maniac. This man was said to have been habitually cruel to women, and for a long time was known to have carried about with him surgical knives and other instruments; his antecedents were of the very worst and his whereabouts at the time of the Whitechapel murders could never be satisfactorily accounted for. He is still alive.”

I have to wonder where Macnaghten obtained his information, as the character of the man he describes is totally different to that of Ostrog.

Ostrog was a petty criminal with numerous convictions for theft and fraud. He did not have any history of violence either generally or towards women, nor is there any record of him using or carrying knives. It was later ascertained that Ostrog was in prison in France at the time of the murders. I have to ask why Macnaghten didn't know this.

Three of the four suspects discussed so far have been put forward as a direct result of the Macnaghten memorandum, a document formulated six years later. I have already highlighted major discrepancies. In the absence of anything further to substantiate the content of the document or any direct evidence connecting the suspects contained therein I suggest the suitability of Macnaghten's three aforementioned suspects as being Jack the Ripper are unfounded and should not be relied upon. The fourth suspect Kosminski mentioned by Macnaghten I will discuss in more detail in due course.

JOHN PIZER

I will mention John Pizer who may have also been known as John Pozer. Pizer was one of the very few persons ever arrested at the time of the murders. He was arrested following the murder of Annie Chapman.

He was a Jewish man resident in Whitechapel and also known as Leather Apron, as he worked in the leather trade and as a result had access to long-bladed knives. As part of his work attire he would have owned a leather apron, one of a similar type found at the scene of Chapman's murder. He was supposedly seen arguing with Annie Chapman prior to her murder. However, this has never been confirmed. There is an official record of a John Pozer having a criminal conviction for stabbing another male with a shoemaker's knife, who some researchers suggest was in fact John Pizer.

Despite being interrogated for a long period of time, Pizer had a solid alibi in relation to the Annie Chapman murder and for the previous murders, thus eliminating him from any further suspicion.

JOSEPH BARNETT

At the time of the murders, 30-year-old Joseph Barnett was the boyfriend of Mary Kelly and prior to her murder had been living with her at 13,

Miller’s Court, the address where she was found murdered. At the time of her murder he was not living there with her, they had apparently fallen out and he had moved into lodgings nearby. However, it is documented that they were still seeing each other on a regular basis.

Barnett was interviewed in relation to her murder but gave an alibi, which was apparently accepted by the police at the time. This alibi being that he was playing cards with others at his lodging house until 12.30am and then went to bed and did not go out after that. The police had no choice other than to accept the alibi in the absence of anything to disprove it.

However, it would be wrong to totally rule out the possibility of Barnett being responsible for killing Mary Kelly and making it look like she was another victim of Jack the Ripper. Some researchers have gone so far as to say that Barnett could have been Jack the Ripper himself.

But what motive could he have had? Well the main one that springs to mind in relation to Mary Kelly is jealously. They had been having a normal relationship and Kelly although having been a prostitute previously was not engaging in prostitution whilst they were together.

Barnett was employed in the fish market but lost his job and was unable to support both of them. So Kelly apparently told him she was going to return to prostitution. He was strongly against her resorting to this. Therefore he could have murdered her out of jealousy as a result of the demise of their relationship and made the killing look as if it had been committed by the real killer.

So did Barnett kill Mary Kelly and was he also Jack the Ripper? There are a substantial amount of similarities between Joseph Barnett and various descriptions purportedly to have been Jack the Ripper, but was he the killer?

Joseph Barnett's physical description tallies very well with a number of witness descriptions, particularly in height (5' 7"), age (30), build (medium), complexion (fair) and the presence of a moustache. But of course as previously stated these cannot safely be relied upon.

His link with Mary Kelly could explain why the killings ceased after her murder. However, this is not the case if either of the other two later murders were committed by the same killer.

There is also the mystery of Mary Kelly's locked door. It was locked when police arrived, indicating the killer either had a key, or when leaving locked the door behind him taking the key with him. We know the key was missing as the police had to break the door down. Although Barnett later stated that as far as he was aware the key had gone missing previously.

This could be explained either by Barnett still being in possession of a key, or his knowledge of the layout of the room and the fact that by reaching through the broken window the door could still be unlocked even if the key were on the inside. However, the same could apply to the killer. It is not known whether Barnett was still in possession of a key to the room despite what he told the police.

It is readily accepted that Kelly took her killer to her room voluntarily presumably after meeting him on the street. But this may not have been the case. What if the killer was prowling the streets, as we know he did? What if he looked through the broken window saw Kelly lying asleep on the bed wearing only her underclothes and he let himself in by reaching inside and unlocking the door, killing her as she slept as has also been suggested? Well, there are a number of interesting theories to consider.

In my opinion Barnett was not involved in the Whitechapel murders but I cannot totally rule him out as being the killer of Kelly. However, if he did kill her and it was a crime of passion, would he have mutilated the body of someone he loved to that extent? Just to make it look like the work of the Ripper? After all he could have just killed her outright as he had an alibi, which would have stood or fallen whether he mutilated her or killed her outright.

PRINCE ALBERT VICTOR – DUKE OF CLARENCE AND AVONDALE

For centuries now the public at large have been fascinated by a royal scandal and almost 125 years after the Whitechapel murders took place we still have a scandal revolving around Prince Albert Victor, Duke of Clarence and Avondale, grandson to Queen Victoria and an heir to the throne.

One of the modern-day theories in recent times suggested that Prince Albert was directly involved in the murders or had knowledge of who was

involved in them. Others who have been suggested as also being involved in some way with the Prince include Sir William Gull (the Queen’s physician) and John Netley (a royal coachman).

The Royal Conspiracy theory first appeared in 1973 in the BBC programme, Jack the Ripper. The programme’s investigators stated they had finally solved the Ripper mystery through a series of conspiracies and cover-ups. The story goes that the producers of the programme in doing research were told to contact a man named Joseph Sickert, aka Joseph Gorman, who stated he knew about a secret marriage between Prince Albert and a poor Catholic girl named Alice Mary Crook. Sickert painted a strange story involving Prince Albert, Lord Salisbury, Sir Robert Anderson, Sir William Gull and even Queen Victoria herself.

Joseph Sickert, stated he was the son of the famous painter, Walter Sickert, who told him the story in later years. Sickert initially stated that his father, Walter Sickert had lived in the East End during the time of the murders and was supposedly a close friend of the royal family. Although it has now been proved that this is not the case, Joseph Sickert told the story of how Lord Salisbury asked his father to take the Prince under his wing and look after him. Joseph Sickert stated his father eventually introduced him to a poor girl named Alice or Annie Crook, who worked in one of the local shops in Cleveland Street. Prince Albert became infatuated with the girl and apparently got the girl pregnant. They then set up home together in the East End and they were living quite happily with their daughter Alice, until the Queen discovered her grandson's indiscretion and demanded that the situation be terminated. Not only was Annie a commoner, but a Catholic as well and there was belief that news of a Catholic heir to the throne would spark a revolution. The story goes that the Queen ordered her Prime Minister, Lord Salisbury, to resolve the matter quickly and discreetly. He, in turn, allegedly went to Sir William Gull. They traced the address in Cleveland Street. Prince Albert was taken away and Annie was taken to one of Gull's hospitals where Gull performed experiments on her designed to erase her memory and drive her insane. The story goes that their child, however, escaped the raid unharmed with her nanny, Mary Kelly.

Sickert stated Kelly had been a co-worker of Annie's, as well as a model for Sickert, and she became the child's nanny soon after its birth. Knowing that the child was in danger Kelly hid baby Alice with nuns and fled back

into the East End. Eventually, she told the story to several of her friends (Nichols, Stride and Chapman) and they decided to blackmail the government when they needed money to pay local protection gangs. When Lord Salisbury learned of the threat, he called on Sir William Gull again.

This time, Gull supposedly devised an elaborate scheme to silence the women based on Masonic rituals. Enlisting the help of John Netley, a coachman, he created Jack the Ripper. Sir Robert Anderson was enlisted to help cover up the crimes and act as lookout during the murders which were carried out in the royal carriage.

The killing of Eddowes, Joseph was told by his father, was a mistake. She often used the name of Mary Kelly and it was a case of mistaken identity. Once the truth was known, the real Mary Kelly was found and silenced. The conspiracy closed in upon itself and for some reason Montague Druitt was chosen as a scapegoat to take the blame and, Sickert hinted, Druitt was murdered for it. The girl, Alice, grew up and later, by an odd series of twists and turns, supposedly married Walter Sickert and gave birth to Joseph.

Records show that there was an Annie Crook who did work in a shop in Cleveland Street. and she did have an illegitimate daughter Alice. The records also show that her daughter remained with her for many years. There is nothing to show she knew Mary Kelly.

My enquiries led me to the conclusion that this story is nothing more than fiction. It is not even worth considering Prince Albert as a suspect for a number of reasons. Alice Margaret Crook was born on 18th April 1885, which means that her conception must have occurred between 18th July and 11th August 1884. At that time the Prince was 400 miles away in Heidelberg with his German tutor. He arrived there in June and returned to England on August 18th. These facts are confirmed by The Royal Archives.

The Royal Marriages Act was still operative and therefore any such marriage between the Prince and Crook could have been set-aside as illegal, because the Prince was under twenty-five years-old at the time of the “marriage” and he had “married” without the Queen's consent.

As previously written, I wrote a letter to Her Majesty the Queen informing her that it was my intention to try to exonerate the Prince from

being a suspect for all these years. As a result, documents I received from the Royal Archives at Windsor Castle gave him cast-iron alibis for the murders.

The documents in question show that on August 8th, a letter from the Prince of Wales records that Prince Albert Victor was laid up in York with gout. At the time he was stationed there with his regiment the 10th Lancers. So therefore could not have been involved in the murder of Martha Tabram.

Between August 31st and September 7th, he was staying with Viscount Downe at Danby Lodge, Grosmont, Yorkshire. So he could not have been involved in the murder of Polly Nichols on August 31st.

Between September 7th and 10th the Prince was at the cavalry barracks in York, so he could not have been involved in the murder of Annie Chapman on the 8th September.

Between September 27th – 30th the Prince was at Abergeldie, Scotland, where Queen Victoria recorded in her journal that he lunched with her on 30th September. (Stride and Eddowes were murdered between 1.00 and 2.00 am, 30th September.)

Between November 2nd and November 12th the Prince was at Sandringham. (Kelly was found murdered November 9th.)

On July 17th 1889 when Alice McKenzie was murdered the Prince wrote in a letter to his brother dated 21st July that he was again in York.

On February 13th 1891 when Frances Coles was murdered, it is documented that the Prince lunched at Marlborough House en route from Osborne to York.

In any event, can we honestly be expected to believe than any member of the royal family, let alone an heir to the throne, would be left to his own devices to come and go as he pleased in the East End of London and be allowed to set up a home and to live as a normal person? I think not.

The other issue with the Prince is the suggestion that he was a homosexual. If this were the case, then this is another aspect which makes the story unbelievable. He died in 1891, supposedly of pneumonia; some say it was syphilis.

I have also looked at the suggestion put forward with regards to Sir William Gull, the Queen's physician being involved and the murders being committed in the royal carriage. I can easily discount this suggestion outright. Firstly, I only have to look at the reports from the doctors who examined the victims at the murder scenes. They all clearly state that the victims were killed where they were found.

If they had been killed in a carriage the bodies could have been dumped anywhere in an isolated place, not in locations where they were likely to have been seen being dumped. It should also be noted that in the case of several of the locations it would have been impossible to drive a carriage to the locations where the bodies were found in any event.

At the time of the murders Sir William Gull was 72 and had suffered a stroke, he could hardly walk. He would have been incapable of murdering anyone, let alone carrying out mutilations. He died of another stroke in 1890.

Is there any other form of evidence to support this story of Joseph Sickert? The answer is no. What motive did Joseph Sickert have for coming forward with this story? The answer is none, other than possibly for financial gain from the press and television. Joseph Sickert later retracted his account after a great deal of pressure was put on him from undisclosed sources.

The problem with the Whitechapel murders and the worldwide interest they still generate is that there is always someone going to appear out of the woodwork with another suspect or another theory. All of which seem to have no substance to them and no form of corroboration. But because the public worldwide are still, to this day, interested in these crimes and are desperate for new facts and evidence to emerge, which may finally identify Jack the Ripper, as a result the press and media will follow-up new revelations and heavily publicize it.

FRANCIS TUMBLETY

Francis Tumblety, aged 54, an American living in London in 1888, was said to have frequented Whitechapel at the time of the murders. Although described in many US press reports as a doctor or physician, there is no evidence he had any formal medical training or held any medical

qualifications, and there's little to suggest he was anything more than a quack who sold potions, pills and creams for a wide variety of ailments.

Tumblety as a Ripper suspect was named by a Scotland Yard police officer serving at the time of the Whitechapel murders in a private letter written twenty-five years later, which was obtained in the early 1990s by Ripper expert, Stewart Evans.

At the time of the murders, John George Littlechild was a Chief Inspector at Scotland Yard, in charge of what was variously known as Special Branch, the Secret Department or Section "D". It was also referred to as the "Special Confidential Section", the "Special (Secret) Branch", and the "Home Office, Crime Department, Special Branch".

His letter, dated 23rd September 1913, was in reply to journalist George R. Sims, a keen Ripper-watcher and commentator.

Here is the relevant section:

"I never heard of a Dr. D. in connection with the Whitechapel murders but amongst the suspects, and to my mind a very likely one, was a Dr. T. (which sounds much like D.). He was an American quack named Tumblety and was at one time a frequent visitor to London and on these occasions constantly brought under the notice of police, there being a large dossier concerning him at Scotland Yard. Although a 'Psychopathia Sexualis' subject he was not known as a 'Sadist' (which the murderer unquestionably was) but his feelings toward women were remarkable and bitter in the extreme, a fact on record. Tumblety was arrested at the time of the murders in connection with unnatural offences and charged at Marlborough Street, remanded on bail, jumped his bail, and got away to Boulogne. He shortly left Boulogne and was never heard of afterwards. It was believed he committed suicide but certain it is that from this time the 'Ripper' murders came to an end."

"*Psychopathia Sexualis*" as referred to in the letter was an early forensic reference book for psychiatrists, physicians, and judges written by Richard Von Krafft-Ebbing and first published in 1886. Ebbing set out to discourage lay readers, deliberately choosing a scientific term for the title of the book and writing parts of it in Latin. The book was one of the first to be written about sexual practices, including homosexuality, and proposed

consideration of the mental state of sex criminals in legal judgments of their crimes. During its time, it became the leading medico-legal textual authority on sexual pathology.

Since its discovery this letter has been the foundation of Tumblety's viability as a Ripper suspect but it has not stood up to close scrutiny. Littlechild in the letter states that Tumblety was believed to have committed suicide. This is not correct; Tumblety lived until 1903 when he died of natural causes. Littlechild also states that after Tumblety fled the country the murders ceased. This is also not totally correct as previously stated the later murders of Frances Coles 1891 and Alice McKenzie 1889 were looked upon by the police as possible Ripper murders. The large dossier referred to by Littlechild may well have been the file of evidence regarding Tumblety's court case. If one carefully reads the letter it is clear that Littlechild is merely giving nothing more than an opinion as to Tumblety's viability as a likely Ripper suspect. There are no other official references, which corroborate Littlechild's opinion. Opinions do not equate to a person being categorized as a prime suspect.

It should be noted that James Monro, who was in overall charge of Special Branch and superior in rank to Littlechild, makes no mention of the Ripper case or of Tumblety in his unpublished 1903 memoirs. Furthermore, with regard to Macnaghten's memorandum, none of his three named "more likely" suspects are Francis Tumblety.

Tumblety was arrested on 7th November on misdemeanour charges of gross indecency with, and indecent assaults upon, four named males.

To qualify as Jack the Ripper any suspect has to have been responsible for all the murders attributed to the killer including the murder of Mary Kelly which occurred in the early hours of Friday 9th November 1888 — two days after Tumblety's arrest — and the question is whether or not Tumblety could have been free on bail at this time in order to have committed the Kelly murder?

The information in trying to answer that question is limited. From the Old Bailey court calendar for November 1888 we know as a documented fact that Tumblety was taken into custody on [Wednesday] 7th November 1888. This document also tells us that a week later, on [Wednesday] 14th

November, he was committed for trial by J. L. Hannay, a magistrate at Marlborough Street Police Court, and on [Friday] 16th November granted bail.

Various US newspapers reported Tumblety's 1888 bail as $1,500 [£300] — the present-day equivalent at current exchange rates of $36,440 [£23,390] — but as yet no documents have come to light to substantiate these figures or identify his sureties.

On the basis of the information contained in the November court calendar we therefore have to account for the whereabouts of Francis Tumblety during the crucial period between 7th and 14th November 1888. Could he have been free on bail between those dates? To answer this we must first look at the circumstances which led to Tumblety's arrest.

The details of Tumblety's eight offences [four for gross indecency, and four for indecent assault] together with the names of the victims were given on the indictment as Friday 27th July [Albert Fisher], Friday 31st August [Arthur Brice], Sunday 14th October [James Crowley] and Friday 2nd November [John Doughty]. It is not known the ages of the men however if they were young males (rent boys) this would have been an aggravating feature of the offences.

From this it appears that during the four-month period leading up to Tumblety's arrest the police had been conducting an investigation into his activities in the West End of London, the area over which Marlborough Street Police Court held jurisdiction.

The last of Tumblety's offences was shown as 2nd November. As he was not arrested [taken into custody] until 7th November it is apparent that he was not arrested whilst actually committing an offence. Had this been the case, a further offence dated 7th November would have appeared on the indictment.

Gross indecency was outlined in Section 11 of The Criminal Amendment Act 1885:*"Any male person who, in public or private, commits, or is a party to the commission of, or procures or attempts to procure the commission by any male person of, any act of gross indecency with another male person, shall be guilty of a misdemeanour, and being convicted thereof*

shall be liable at the discretion of the court to be imprisoned for any term not exceeding two years, with or without hard labour."

The act gave no specific definition of gross indecency, as Victorian morality demurred from precise descriptions of activities held to be immoral. In practice, this law was broadly used to prosecute male homosexuals where actual sodomy (buggery, anal intercourse, which was a felony) could not be proven.

Most famously, Oscar Wilde in 1895 was convicted under section 11 and sentenced to the maximum 2 years penal servitude (hard labour). The trial judge in that case deemed that maximum sentence which he was permitted by law to pass was totally unacceptable; suggesting that he would have imposed a longer sentence had the legislation allowed him to do so.

A misdemeanour should not be construed as necessarily less serious than a felony. Russell's "A Treatise on Crimes and Misdemeanours" [fifth edition], 1877: "*a misdemeanour is said to be a name generally applied to offences for which the law has not provided a particular name. But so many crimes have been created. Misdemeanours by statute which do not differ in character from felonies, that no distinction founded on the nature of the crime can be drawn between them. Nor can they be distinguished by the greater or less severity of the punishment, for some misdemeanours are punished more severely than felonies."*

It should also be noted that although the type of sexual offences Tumblety was arrested for were classified as misdemeanours, which are a separate classification to that of the more serious felony, many offences however of a similar nature bore a thin line between a felony and a misdemeanour i.e. if a person steals apples from and orchard it is a theft and classed as a misdemeanour. If however a person steals apples from a basket outside a shop it would still be theft but would be classed as a felony. All distinctions between a felony and a misdemeanour were abolished in the UK in 1967.

Misdemeanours relating to serious sexual cases were indictable only. They could not be dealt with by magistrates, who in 1888, as today, had only limited sentencing powers. Such offences were tried at the Central Criminal Court.

The evidence the police would have sought to rely on in the case against Tumblety would have consisted of evidence in written statement form from the victims and any other witnesses, as well as evidence in written statement form from the two named policemen in the case “PS Frank Froest CID” and “PS Walter Dinnie CID”. Their evidence may also have included evidence obtained from surveillance, an undercover operation, or both.

A close examination of police and court procedures of the day demonstrates two ways in which Tumblety could have been arrested in connection with these sexual offences, the first being an arrest without warrant.

The offences for which Tumblety was arrested were classed as misdemeanours, and arrests without a warrant for misdemeanour offences could only be made if [a] a statute gave a specific power of arrest for a particular offence, [b] a breach of the peace was actually taking place, or [c] an offence was about to take place and an arrest was necessary in order to prevent it.

In 1888 there were specific guidelines for dealing with persons arrested without a warrant for any offence and taken to a police station.

The Metropolitan Police Act 1839, Section 69:

“Every person taken into custody by any constable belonging to the Metropolitan Police, without warrant, except persons detained for the mere purpose of ascertaining their name or residence, shall be forthwith delivered into the custody of the Sgt or Inspector in charge of the nearest station-house in order that such person may be secured until he can be brought before a magistrate to be dealt with according to law, or may give bail for his appearance before a magistrate, if the Sgt or Inspector in charge shall deem it prudent to take bail in the manner hereinafter mentioned.”

Section 38 of the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879:

“A person taken into custody for an offence without a warrant shall be brought before a Court of Summary Jurisdiction [Police Court/Magistrates Court] as soon as practicable after he is so taken into custody; and if it is not or will not be practicable to bring him before a Court of Summary Jurisdiction within 24 hours after he is so taken into custody, a superintendent or inspector of police, or other officer of police of equal or superior rank, or in charge of any police station, shall enquire into the case; and, except where the offence appears to such superintendent,

inspector or officer to be of a serious nature, shall discharge the prisoner upon his entering into a recognizance, with or without sureties, for a reasonable amount, to appear before some Court of Summary Jurisdiction at the day, time and place named in the recognizance."

The question to be addressed is whether, if arrested without a warrant, Tumblety could have been eligible for bail:

"Bail, so far as police purposes are concerned, is the guarantee, under pecuniary [relating to or involving money] liability, to appear, or to produce an accused person to be tried according to law at an appointed time and place. It is of two kinds: —

"[a] That admitted by a police officer.

"[b] That allowed by Judge or Magistrate.

"As to police station court bail, the inspector or other officer in charge of a police station may under the provisions of the Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 George IV., c.44, s. 9), and the Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 and 3 Vict., c. 47, ss. 70 and 72), admit to bail persons charged with any petty misdemeanour for which they are liable to be summarily convicted by a Magistrate — such as drunkenness, disorderly conduct, carelessly doing a hurt or damage, etc., and by Section 38 of the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879 (42 and 43 Vict., c. 49), if the person in custody without a warrant cannot be taken before a magistrate within 24 hours, bail is compulsory for any trifling offence, even a felony not of a serious nature."

Procedures were in place had Tumblety been eligible for police bail:

"If persons in custody for a bailable offence wish to send for bail, and are willing to pay for a messenger or telegram being sent, the officer in charge of the station is to take the necessary steps without delay.

"If prisoners have no money, and are desirous of being bailed, the necessary expenses of sending for bail will be allowed by the Commissioner, there being no object on the part of the Police in unnecessarily detaining in the cells a prisoner who can be legally liberated on sufficient bail being offered. The Police telegraph is to be used in such cases wherever practicable. Money or other property is not in any case to be accepted as a deposit in lieu of bail or of the recognizance of the person charged."

Tumblety could not therefore have secured bail with cash, a personal cheque or the diamonds in which he later insisted the police were so interested. The key words relating to police bail were:

"If the person in custody without a warrant cannot be taken before a magistrate within 24 hours . . ."

Tumblety was arrested [taken into custody] on Wednesday 7th November 1888. Even had his arrest been in the evening of that day [after court hours], it would have been less than 24 hours before Marlborough Street Police Court reconvened on Thursday 8th November 1888, and so the matter of police bail would not have arisen.

The other option open to the police in effecting Tumblety's arrest was to go before a magistrate to obtain an arrest warrant. For this to be issued the police would have to have given sworn information as to the grounds for seeking the warrant. And following the issuance and execution of the arrest warrant Tumblety would have been brought straight to court and the charges put to him before a magistrate.

Under these circumstances Tumblety would not have entered a police station, unless of course the arrest warrant was executed out of court hours. In that event he would have been detained in the police station cells until the following morning when the court reconvened. He could not have been bailed at the police station under the terms of the arrest warrant for this type of offence; as such warrants issued by the court were not eligible for bail. Once executed the warrant could not be reused. A specimen arrest warrant is set out below, granted under Section 3 of the Indictable Offences Act 1848.

"To the Constable of_____ and to all other peace officers in the said (County) of _____ Whereas A .B. of _____Hath this day been ***charged*** *upon oath before the undersigned (Magistrates name) of Her Majesty's Justices of the Peace in and for the said (County) for that he on _____at _____ did (Offence). These are therefore to command you, in Her Majesty's name, forthwith to* ***apprehend the said A. B. and to bring him before (me) or some other Justice of The Peace in and for the said (County) to answer unto the said charge, and to be further dealt with according to law****. Given under my hand and seal this _____Day of _____ In the year of our Lord_____ at_____ in the (County) aforesaid."*

Had Tumblety been arrested on such a warrant then Section 3 of the Act sets out specific actions open to the justices thereafter:

“It shall be lawful for such justice and justices, and he and they are hereby justice and justices for the same county or place to be dealt with according to law and afterwards, if such persons be thereupon apprehended and brought before any such justice or justices, such justice or justices upon its being proved upon oath or affirmation before him or them that the person so apprehended is the same person who is charged and named in such indictment shall, without further inquiry or examination commit him for trial or admit him to bail, in a manner herein after mentioned.”

Accordingly, the possibility thus arises of Tumblety having been bailed by a Police Court Magistrate on Wednesday 7th or Thursday 8th November 1888, at which time the final "Ripper" murder was a maximum of 36 hours away.

“If the investigation before the magistrate cannot be completed at a single hearing, he may from time to time remand the accused to gaol for any period not exceeding eight days; or may allow him his liberty in the interval upon his entering into recognizance’s, with or without sureties, for reappearance" [11 and 12 Vict. c.42, s.21].

Here again we must refer to the Old Bailey court calendar for November 1888, a document published after the close of that month's session on Friday 23rd November. The calendar clearly states that Tumblety was committed for trial on 14th November and not bailed until 16th November 1888.

Also contained in this official document is evidence to suggest that Tumblety had not been granted earlier bail at a Police Court, for two other persons on trial during the Old Bailey December Sessions — Jane Levy and Arthur Andrew Cottee — are noted as having been "Bailed at Police Court".

No such notation appears in the entry for Tumblety. It is also noticeable that Tumblety’s committal hearing was not reported in the UK press and is easily explained.

In cases which fell outside a magistrate's “*summary jurisdiction”* [cases upon which he could pass sentence]: “*The room in which the examination (Committal Proceedings) is held is not to be deemed an open court; and the magistrate may exclude any person if he thinks fit.” [11 & 12 Vict. c. 42, s. 19, Indictable Offences Act, 1848]*

So where was Tumblety between November 7th and 14th 1888? In the absence of any reliable evidence to suggest Tumblety was out on bail at the

time of the murder of Mary Kelly at Miller's Court on 9th November 1888, it may be concluded that during the period between his arrest [taken into custody] on 7th November and his 14th November committal for trial he was remanded in custody for the maximum eight-day period.

"If the investigation before the magistrate cannot be completed at a single hearing, he may from time to time remand the accused to gaol for any period not exceeding eight days . . ." [11 and 12 Vict. c.42, s.21].

In 1888 prisoners committed on remand from Police Courts in Middlesex [which included Marlborough Street] were held at the Clerkenwell House of Detention. Here Tumblety would have been able to have visits from friends and also his solicitor. He would also have been allowed to wear his own clothes.

On 14th November 1888 Tumblety would have been returned from the Clerkenwell House of Detention to Marlborough Street Magistrates Court for committal to the Central Criminal Court. Once the evidence had been heard and the magistrate was satisfied it was sufficient, he "*committed*" Tumblety for trial.

He could now either send him to prison for safe custody *(to secure his attendance at his trial and to prevent him absconding)* or admit him to bail, and the guiding principle behind his decision would have been the probability of Tumblety — a foreign national with no permanent UK residence — appearing to take his trial, the likelihood of witness interference, or the fact that he may continue to commit further offences, and not any supposed guilt or innocence. After the committal proceedings Tumblety or his solicitor could obtain a copy of all the witness statements on the payment of a nominal sum.

As it is clear that Tumblety was not bailed following his 14th November committal for trial, he would have immediately been transferred from Marlborough Street Police Court to Newgate Prison to await trial. Newgate at this time was reserved for prisoners awaiting trial at the Central Criminal Court, and the two institutions were connected via an underground passageway.

At Newgate the constable escorting Tumblety would have handed the gaoler the warrant of commitment:

"To the constable of and to the keeper of the [house of correction] at, in the said [county] of. "Whereas A. B. was this day charged before me, J. S., one of Her Majesty's justices of the peace in and for the aid [county] of on

oath of C. D. and others, for that [&c stating shortly the offence]: These are therefore to command you the said constable of , to take the said A. B., and him safely to convey to the [house of correction] at aforesaid, and there to deliver him to the keeper thereof, together with this precept; and I do hereby command you the said keeper of the said [house of correction] to receive the said A. B. into your custody in the said [house of correction], and there safely keep him until he shall be thence delivered by due course of law. Given under my hand and seal, this day of , in the year of our Lord at , in the [county] aforesaid. J. S." [11 & 12 Vict. c. 42, Sched. T.1].

In return the gaoler handed the constable a receipt for Tumblety:

"I hereby certify, that I have received from W. T., constable of , the body of A. B., together with a warrant under the hand and seal of J. S., Esquire, one of Her Majesty's justices of the peace for the [county] of , and that the said A. B. was [sober, or as the case may be], at the time he was delivered into my custody. P. K. Keeper of the house of correction [or common gaol] at . . ."" [11 & 12 Vict. c. 42, Sched. T.2].

It is therefore possible Tumblety was bailed from Newgate Prison on [Friday] 16th November 1888. Under 11 & 12 Vict. c. 42, s. 23, Indictable Offences Act, 1848, "*Where a person charged with other indictable misdemeanours is committed to prison to take his trial for the same, he can apply:"*

" . . . to any one of the visiting justices of such prison, or to any other justice of the peace for the same county, riding, division, liberty, city, borough, or place, before the first day of the sitting or session at which he is to be tried, or before the day to which such sitting or session may be adjourned, to be admitted to bail, such justice shall according admit him to bail in manner aforesaid; and in all cases where such accused person in custody shall be admitted to bail by a justice of the peace other than the committing justice or justices as aforesaid, such justice of the peace so admitting him to bail shall forthwith transmit the recognizance or recognizance's of bail to the committing justice [in Tumblety's case, J. L. Hannay] *or justices, or one of them, to be by him or them transmitted, with the examination, to the proper officer . . ."*

So why was there a two-day delay between Tumblety's committal and him being granted bail? In "*Summary Jurisdiction Procedure*," by Cecil George Douglas [1907], which discusses the 1848 to 1899 summary jurisdiction acts regulating the duties of justices of the peace, the author

appends a note regarding 11 & 12 Vict. c. 42, s.21 and the eligibility of bail in cases of misdemeanour.

"Bail Before or After Committal — A distinction appears to be drawn as to the rights of an accused person to bail in cases of misdemeanour before and after committal for trial. The generally received impression appears to be that the right of bail in misdemeanour does not arise until committal for trial."

It therefore appears that Tumblety was not eligible for bail until *after* his Wednesday 14th November committal for trial. Only then would Magistrate J. L. Hannay have agreed to bail, but on the understanding that suitable sureties were found. Tumblety was, after all, a foreign national, with no permanent UK residence. In the meantime he would be held at Newgate.

Even if we assume that Tumblety himself came up with his own suitable sureties or alternatively via his solicitor, there were further legal hurdles to overcome before he could be finally released on bail.

Douglas', "*Summary Jurisdiction Procedure"* — "Bail was taken by stating verbally to the accused and his sureties the substance of the recognizance, thus:

You A. B. of, and you C. D. of, and you E. F. of, severally acknowledge yourselves to owe our Sovereign Lady the Queen the several sums following, that is to say, you the said A. B. in the sum of , &c. [11 & 12 Vict. c. 42, Sched. S.1. gives the full wording and terms of the recognizance].

"In suspicious cases twenty-four hours', and sometimes forty-eight hours' notice of bail is usually required; when the bail appears, whether such notice has been given or not, the justice or prosecutor, or any other professional person on his behalf, may examine them on oath as to their sufficiency.

"It is the duty of justices to ascertain the sufficiency of the bail who tenders themselves on behalf of the accused . . ."

So who stood surety for Tumblety? The identity of Tumblety's two sureties is unknown. One slight clue is from the New York World, 2nd December 1888:

“ . . . Dr. Tumblety was committed for trial and liberated on bail, two gentlemen coming forward to act as bondsmen in the amount of $1,500. On being hunted up by the police to-day, they asserted that they had only known the doctor for a few days previous to his arrest.”

Whilst not inaccurate, the term “bondsmen” in a UK context may be slightly misleading, for this newspaper report was from America where sharp-suited bondsmen stalked the nation's courthouses, and bail bonds were a lucrative sector in the high-interest moneylending industry.

Bail worked differently in the UK. 11 & 12 Vict. c. 42, s.23:

“The usual number of sureties is two; but sometimes only one is required, and sometimes three or more. "Married women, infants, or prisoners in custody, or persons having previously been convicted of infamous crimes were ineligible as sureties. Persons standing surety had to be upright members of the community who could demonstrate upon oath before a Magistrate or Judge that, in the event of their bailee absconding [they were wholly responsible for his appearance at court], the value of their property, estates or business holdings was sufficient to cover the amount pledged.” In the matter of default, payment was: *“to be made and levied of their several goods and chattels, lands and tenements respectively . . .”* [see Sched S.1., above]. Standing surety could not be a cash transaction.

It therefore becomes apparent that Tumblety had respectable friends.

So who granted Tumblety bail and from where? From the foregoing it would appear to have been the Marlborough Street Police Court magistrate J. L. Hannay. However with regards to the due process of the law in 1888, legislation was also in place for anyone having been refused bail by the magistrates to make a further bail application to a higher court. (The Central Criminal Court), (Summary Jurisdiction Act 1879). This is known as a Judge in Chambers (JIC) bail application. So it is quite possible that bail could have been granted by a judge at the Central Criminal Court and the sureties taken before him there and then on November 16th.

Following the sureties being deemed suitable a warrant of deliverance would have been issued:

“*And be it enacted, that in all cases where a Justice or Justices of the Peace shall admit to Bail any Person who shall then be in any Prison charged with the Offence for which he shall be so admitted to Bail, such Justice or Justices shall send to or cause to be lodged with the Keeper of such Prison a Warrant of Deliverance under his or their Hand and Seal or*

Hands and Seals, requiring the said Keeper to discharge the Person so admitted to Bail, if he be detained for no other Offence, and upon such Warrant of Deliverance being delivered to or lodged with such Keeper he shall forthwith obey the same."

On Friday 16th November 1888 had this due process taken place Tumblety would have been released on bail upon receipt by the "*Keeper of such prison [Newgate]"* of his "*Warrant of Deliverance."*

The next important question is did Tumblety ever appear at the Old Bailey? If he did attend the court, then the exact date of his appearance is unknown. But it should be noted that the Old Bailey November Sessions opened on Monday 19th November, closed on Friday 23rd November and, by Saturday 24th November, Tumblety had reached Le Havre and was aboard the transatlantic liner "*SS La Bretagne*", bound for New York.

Time was short, but luck may have been on Tumblety's side. On receipt of all committal papers the Central Criminal Court would have prepared them in order of severity. Murders and robberies first to be tried. Misdemeanours, second. All of the cases due to be heard at those sessions would first be put before a grand jury which sat on the opening morning of the sessions. It was their role to examine each case to ensure there was sufficient evidence to put before the jury. If so, this was known as a "true bill". Cases they felt did not meet the necessary criteria would be thrown out, marked as "Not found", and the prisoner released.

Tumblety's indictment papers were marked "true bill" and signed by William Sugg, the grand jury foreman, after which they would have been handed to the court, in readiness for Tumblety's trial before the jury.

One clue we have to Tumblety's possible appearance at the November Sessions is the November 1888 Old Bailey calendar. This shows that his case was "*Remanded until next Session"* [commencing 10th December]. How could this postponement have come about? The following may give us a clue:

"The trial may, however be postponed to the next assizes or sessions at the instance of the prosecutor or defendant, on showing to the court a sufficient cause for delay, such as the sudden illness of the prisoner, or the unavoidable absence or illness of a necessary and material witness, the existence of prejudice in the jury, and the like."

Did Tumblety or his defence counsel apply to have the trial adjourned? No. It clearly states that:

"Where the application is made by the defendant, he will be remanded and detained in custody until the next assizes or sessions; but where the application is made by the prosecutor, it is in the direction of the court either to detain the defendant in custody or admit him to bail, or to discharge him on his own recognizance's."

If Tumblety did appear at the Old Bailey, then, as he was able to flee abroad it must be concluded that, for as yet unknown reasons, it was the Crown [the prosecution] who applied to postpone Tumblety's trial.

It is more than likely that Tumblety's original bail incorporating his sureties was extended. In Victorian times the due process of the law was much the same as it still is today. Anyone failing to appear at any court having been so charged or indicted, and having entered into a personal recognizance to appear and fails to do so without just cause, would give the court no option other than to issue a warrant to arrest that person and bring him before the next available court following his arrest. This warrant is known as a bench warrant.

The Old Bailey court calendar for December 1888 reveals the end of the story.

Tumblety's case was marked, "*Remanded from last session"*. The column headed, "*When tried"* is blank, save for the remark, "*Recognizance's of Defendant Estreated"*. And written in ink at the top of Tumblety's indictment papers are the words, "*Trial postponed 10th December 1888. Not in custody. Recognizance's estreated"*. This is a clear indication that he failed to appear for his trial on that date.

Is Tumblety a viable Ripper suspect? Tumblety proponents would say yes and subscribe to a different scenario surrounding his arrest and his movements within the 1888 criminal justice system. They suggest that as the offences were petty misdemeanours he would automatically have been granted bail. They have used the following extract from the Summary Jurisdiction Act 1879 to bolster their theory:

"Admission to Bail by a Police Officer" — The Inspector, or other officer in charge of a police station, may, under the provisions of the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879, s. 38, and the Police Acts, admit to bail, with or without sureties, persons charged with any petty misdemeanour for which they are liable to be summarily convicted by a Magistrate — such as drunkenness, assault, disorderly conduct, carelessly doing any hurt or damage, &c. Persons who are in custody without warrant for any trifling

offence, even light felonies, and cannot be taken before a Magistrate within 24 hours must be bailed provided that they are well known and not likely to escape."

This part of the legislation has previously been discussed and clearly does not stand up to close scrutiny as far as suggesting Tumblety as a viable Ripper suspect. Firstly the offences of gross indecency and indecent assault were not petty misdemeanours, and secondly they were not able to be summarily tried by a magistrate. On conviction a court could impose a maximum of two years imprisonment with hard labour.

Tumblety proponents also suggest that he was arrested by the police on November 7th in connection with the murders and that following interview was then further arrested in connection with the sexual offences and then interviewed regarding those, and following his interviews, released from the police station on police bail a process now referred to in today's criminal justice systems as the "*Delayed charge process"* and then given a date to return after further enquiries had been made into matters arising from both his interviews, and for committal papers to be drawn up in relation to the sexual offences.

Proponents further suggest that as he didn't surrender to that police bail an arrest warrant was issued, and details on the court calendar are offered in corroboration of this. Furthermore it is also suggested that, having failed to surrender to police bail, following his rearrest on November 14th he was then granted further bail on November 16th. These suggestions like the aforementioned clearly do not stand up to close scrutiny.

The police following an arrest of a suspect did not conduct formal interviews in 1888.

I refer to Lord Brampton otherwise known as Sir Henry Hawkins and his address to police constables in 1882. Lord Brampton was a senior high court judge from 1876-1898:

Questioning when Permissible.

> *"When a crime has been committed, and you are engaged in endeavouring to discover the author of it, there is no objection to your making inquiries of, or putting questions to, any person from whom you think you can obtain useful information. It is your duty to discover the criminal if you can, and to do this you must make such inquiries, and if in the course of them you should chance to interrogate and to*

receive answers from a man who turns out to be the criminal himself, and who inculpates himself by these answers, they are nevertheless admissible in evidence, and may be used against him.

When not Permissible.

"When, however, a Constable has a warrant to arrest, or is about to arrest a person on his own authority, or has a person in custody for a crime, it is wrong to question such person touching the crime of which he is accused. Neither judge, magistrate nor juryman, can interrogate an accused person — unless he tenders himself as a witness, or require him to answer questions tending to incriminate himself. Much less, then, ought a Constable to do so, whose duty as regards that person is simply to arrest and detain him in safe custody. On arresting a man a Constable ought simply to read his warrant, or tell the accused the nature of the charge upon which he is arrested, leaving it to the person so arrested to say anything or nothing as he pleases.

"For a Constable to press any accused person to say anything with reference to the crime of which he is accused is very wrong. It is well also that it should be generally known that if a statement made by an accused person is made under or in consequence of any promise or threat, even though it amounts to an absolute confession, it cannot be used against the person making it.

"There is, however, no objection to a Constable listening to any mere voluntary statement which a prisoner desires to make, and repeating such statement in evidence; nor is there any objection to his repeating in evidence any conversation he may have heard between the prisoner and any other person. But he ought not by anything he says or does, to invite or encourage an accused person to make any statement, without first cautioning him that he is not bound to say anything tending to incriminate himself, and that anything he says may be used against him."

Lord Brampton also commented on the question of the police granting bail to an accused person: "*By way of addition to what I have already written I desire to say a word or two upon the subject of bail. This may at first sight appear to have but little connection with the duty of a Policeman.*

It is not, however, quite so, for it often happens that a Police Inspector or Sergeant has the duty cast upon him to decide whether for a few hours a person arrested and in his custody, charged with an offence punishable by law, shall be kept in custody or released on his recognizance, until in due course of law he is required to appear before a magistrate to answer the charge.

"Now it is a serious thing to imprison without the order of a magistrate and before trial. To everybody this inconvenience and annoyance is great — to a person of character it may cause him to be an object of suspicion for many a long day, to his great injury."

"In coming to a decision many circumstances have to be considered; among them the general character of the accused, and whether he has a known and fixed place of abode; for a man of character living in a fixed home would be very unlikely to abscond and forfeit his recognizance. On the other hand, a man arrested whilst committing a serious crime, e.g., a burglary, or a violent breach of the peace, could hardly be left without restraint. So if the crime imputed was in itself one inviting long or serious punishment, e.g., murder, rape, etc., it is unlikely that any Police Officer would under ordinary circumstances take upon himself the responsibility of releasing a man on bail; for few persons could be trusted not to endeavour to evade by flight charges which would (if proved) involve such serious consequences."

Victorian police procedures differed dramatically to those used by the police and courts today and have a significant and direct bearing on many of the issues surrounding Tumblety and his arrest and the events thereafter.

In today's criminal justice system the Bail Act 1976 first granted the police powers to use the "*Delayed charge bail procedure*", otherwise known as "*police bail*". This is where a person has been arrested for an offence, interviewed and released on bail to return back to the police station. This process enables police officers to conduct further enquiries into the offences and to prove or disprove matters raised by the suspect during the interview. The police today are also able to attach conditions to this type of bail. If a person having been granted bail by the police to return back to a police station fails to do so the police have a specific power of arrest.

This “*police bail”* process is different from the process known as “*police station court bail”* this is where a person is formally charged at a police station and given bail to appear at a Magistrates’ court at a date and time in the future and was also in use in 1888.

There was no legislation in place for the police to grant bail under the “*delayed charge” (police bail)* process in 1888. As there was no power for the police to grant bail under this process there could be no power of arrest for anyone failing to return. So this clearly negates the suggestion that Tumblety was later arrested for failing to return on bail.

In Victorian times the word “*Charge”* had a slightly different meaning and interpretation. To make it easier to understand with regards to criminal offences today, when a person makes an allegation against another or reports a crime the person making the complaint is today known as “*The complainant”*, *“The victim”* or *“The injured party”*.

In Victorian times a person making a criminal allegation against another was commonly known as “*The Prosecutor”* and the complaint they made was known as a “*Charge”*. When a person was arrested the officer would either say “*I charge”* you or “*I arrest you”* with_____
In the case of police officers detecting offences by means of their own investigations when arresting a person they would still use those same words.

If an accused person whilst under arrest and in custody made any admissions or volunteered any verbal statements regarding the allegations these would be recorded and used in evidence. As previously mentioned no formal interviews would take place following an arrest. The evidence to support the “*Charge”* would not be tested or challenged until the case came before the courts.

Furthermore Tumblety could not have been arrested on November 14th on a warrant for failing to appear as suggested because that date was a midweek date and an arrest warrant clearly stipulates that a person arrested has to be brought before a court as soon as practicable, and not two days later.

The court calendar clearly shows that Tumblety was received into custody on November 7th not that he was arrested on that date as you might expect if he had been granted any form of bail on that date. The court calendar also shows the warrant referred to was a committal warrant and not an arrest warrant.

Another major concern I have with the “Tumblety as possible Ripper suspect” theory is that it is obvious Tumblety had made up his mind to abscond. So having regard to the suggestion that he was out on bail from November 7th and the further suggestion that he was in fact released on “*police bail”*, why did he not abscond then? He would have certainly known the strength of the evidence against him and would have known whether or not it would have been strong enough for the police to secure a conviction, and what length of sentence a court would likely impose on conviction or a guilty plea. Why wait, knowing he had seven days in which to disappear? Another question is why, if he had been bailed on November 7th and failed to return, would a court consider further bail, even with sureties?

There is one final piece of evidence, which also points towards the innocence of Tumblety, which without a doubt is important to consider. As has been previously mentioned Tumblety as likely as not was under surveillance by the police from July-November 1888 in connection with the offences of gross indecency, and as a result was charged with three offences. It should be noted that the date shown for one of those three offences was August 31st. That date is significant because it was the date Mary Nichols was murdered. So the question is could he have committed her murder on that same day, whilst under police surveillance and when committing an offence of gross indecency against a young male person? I think not.

Of course there is other additional evidence available which must also be taken into consideration when trying to prove or disprove Tumblety’s likely involvement in the murders. This evidence comes from official police sources and is contained in a Home Office file numbered HO 144/221A49301G, and is with The National Archives. This file relates to the payment of additional expenses to police officers drafted into Whitechapel at the time of the murders. It has been long suggested that a short time after the Mary Kelly murder in November 1888 the police operation in Whitechapel was wound down.

Some researchers suggest that it was because the police knew the identity of the killer and that fact that he could not kill again. This could relate to the Druitt theory, or perhaps Tumblety fleeing the country, or Kosminski being caged in a lunatic asylum.

The truth is that this file shows that the police who were drafted into Whitechapel were kept on at great additional expense long after the Mary Kelly murder. In fact they were not wound down for some considerable time after the Kelly murder.

In July 1889 in Whitechapel there was still a compliment of three sergeants and thirty-nine constables from other divisions outside Whitechapel, that decreased slightly in January 1890 to three sergeants and twenty-six constables and in March 1890 it was reduced even more to two sergeants and eleven constables which may indicate that they clearly suspected the murder of Alice McKenzie in July 1889 as being the work of the Ripper.

This same file contains memos from many senior officers regarding the concerns over the cost of this extra manpower. Clearly this shows that up until then the police did not have any clue as to the identity of Jack the Ripper or any suspicions about any other killer or killers. So that must now eliminate Druitt and Ostrog totally.

All of the above facts and my thorough re-examination into Francis Tumblety suggest to me that he was in custody on the date Mary Kelly was murdered, and could have had no involvement in her murder and therefore was not Jack the Ripper. His status as a Ripper suspect is poorly deserved. The time has now come to remove Francis Tumblety once and for all from the suspect list but I doubt that will happen, despite the overwhelming evidence which shows his innocence.

GEORGE CHAPMAN

George Chapman was a twenty-three-year-old Polish immigrant living in Whitechapel at the time of the murders. It was suggested he studied medicine and surgery in Russia before he came to London where it was reported that he worked as a barber in the East End. Shortly after arriving in London he changed his name to George Chapman from Severin Klosowski his given name.

He was suggested as a likely suspect by Inspector Abberline in later years following his arrest in connection with the attempted murder of his wife with a knife, and the subsequent murders he committed whereby he poisoned a number of women who he had relationships with. These

murders occurred long after the Whitechapel murder enquiry had ceased. He was never arrested or interviewed regarding the Whitechapel murders.

Inspector Abberline did admit to there being a problem with Chapman being the Ripper. One major discrepancy is that the people who alleged that they saw a person who they believed to have been Jack the Ripper at one time or another with the victims, all describe men about thirty-five or forty years of age. No witness made the Ripper out to be as young twenty-three as Chapman was in 1888.

Researchers suggest that another reason for Chapman to be regarded as a viable suspect is with regards to his personal characteristics and those of Jack the Ripper. Chapman had a regular job, as it was suggested the Ripper did, since the murders all occurred on weekends. His ex-wife even went so far as to say that he was in the habit of staying out into the early hours of the morning; of course this could have been due to his persistent womanizing.

Chapman apparently had an outrageous sexual drive, if his many affairs and relationships are any guide to go by. The Ripper was according to some researchers a sexual serial murderer, although on the face of it nothing sexual appeared to be behind the murders, other than the mutilations and the supposed removal of the sexual organs.

Criminologists and behavioural experts differ on whether murderers maintain their modus operandi, which means the way they kill their victims. Murderers will change their modus operandi as they gain experience. This is learned behaviour . From my experience I disagree. So I have to ask, if Chapman was the killer did he change from a savage brutal killer to a passive poisoner many years later? I suspect not.

Chapman was hanged at Wandsworth Prison on April 7th, 1903. I would also have expected that if the police suspected him of being the Ripper they would have gone to interview him whilst he was awaiting execution. The visit may or may not have taken place. In any event nothing was recorded. Had they done so and Chapman was the killer he may well have unburdened his conscience before going to meet his maker.

So was Chapman Jack the Ripper? I suggest not. I think like the other suspects mentioned previously he came to notice in later years for killing a

number of women albeit by a different method, Inspector Abberline was a well-respected officer and I am sure if he had real suspicions about Chapman then he would have at least been interviewed and this would have been documented. In the absence of this I can only assume there was nothing to suggest he was Jack the Ripper and that Abberline was giving nothing more than a personal opinion as to Chapman's viability as a suspect years later, and I again reiterate opinions do not equate to prime suspects.

JAMES MAYBRICK

In 1993 a diary purporting to be that of Jack the Ripper surfaced in Liverpool. A former Liverpool scrap-metal dealer by the name of Michael Barrett stated he had been given the diary by a man named Tony Deveraux who had now died. There was no accompanying provenance to prove its authenticity. The diary contained self-confessions by the killer. It was suggested the writer of the diary and Jack the Ripper was James Maybrick, a cotton merchant from Liverpool.

When experts first examined the diary it appeared to be genuine. There were pages torn out and passages scribbled out. However, instead of laying to rest forever one of the greatest criminal cases of the last century, it did the opposite, with some experts saying it was genuine whilst others dismissed it outright as being a forgery. Experts who examined the diary all agreed that the paper was from the Victorian era, and the ink used appeared to have been from that same period.

When Barrett made public the diary he was inundated with financial offers from the media, television and film companies. However, it wasn't very long before many people questioned its authenticity. This would appear to have put enormous pressure on Barrett, resulting in him going to a solicitor on January 9th 1995 to sign and subsequently release a lengthy and detailed sworn affidavit. This affidavit set out in great detail how he and his wife had set about forging the diary and is reproduced below:

Michael Barrett's Confessions
January 5th 1995

From a sworn affidavit:

I MICHAEL BARRETT make oath and state as follows:-

That I am an Author by occupation and a former Scrap Metal Merchant. I reside alone at XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX, and at this time I am incapacitated due to an accident, for which I am attending Hospital as an outpatient. I have this day been informed that it may be necessary (sic) for them to amputate two of the fingers on my right hand.

Since December 1993 I have been trying, through the press, the Publishers, the Author of the Book, Mrs. Harrison, and my Agent Doreen Montgomery to expose the fraud of ' The Diary of Jack the Ripper ' ("the diary").

Nobody will believe me and in fact some very influential people in the Publishing and Film world have been doing everything to discredit me and in fact they have gone so far as to introduce a new and complete story of the original facts of the Diary and how it came to light.

The facts of this matter are outlined as follows:-

I Michael Barrett (sic) was the author of the original diary of 'Jack the Ripper' and my wife, Anne Barrett; hand wrote it from my typed notes and on occasions at my dictation, the details of which I will explain in due course.

The idea of the Diary came from discussion between Tony Devereux, Anne Barrett my wife and myself, there came a time when I believed such a hoax was a distinct possibility. We looked closely at the background of James Maybrick and I read everything to do with the Jack the Ripper matter. I felt Maybrick was an ideal candidate for Jack the Ripper. Most important of all, he could not defend himself. He was not 'Jack the Ripper' of that I am certain, but, times, places, visits to London and all that fitted. It was too (sic) easy (sic).

I told my wife Anne Barrett, I said, "Anne I'll write a bestseller here, we can't fail".

Once I realised we could do it. We had to find the necessary materials, paper, pens and ink. I gave this serious consideration.

Roughly round about January, February 1990 Anne Barrett and I finally decided to go ahead and write the Diary of Jack the Ripper. In fact Anne purchased a Diary, a red leather backed Diary for L25.00p, she made the

purchase through a firm in the 1986 Writers Year Book, I cannot remember their name, she paid for the Diary by cheque in the amount of L25 which was drawn on her Lloyds Bank Account, Water Street Branch, Liverpool. When this Diary arrived in the post I decided it was of no use, it was very small. My wife is now in possession of this Diary in fact she asked for it specifically recently when I saw her at her home address XXXXXXXXXXXXXX.

At about the same time as all this was being discussed by my wife and I, I spoke to William Graham about our idea. This was my wife's father and he said to me, it's a good idea, if you can get away with it and in fact he gave me L50 towards expenses which I expected to pay at least for the appropriate paper should I find it.

I feel sure it was the end of January 1990 when I went to the Auctioneer, Outhwaite & Litherland, XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX.

It was about 11.30am in the morning when I attended the Auctioneers. I found a photograph Album which contained approximately, approximately (sic) 125 pages of photographs. They were old photographs and they were all to do with the 1914/1918 1st World War. This Album was part of lot No.126 which was for auction with a 'brass compass', it looked to me like a 'seaman's Compass', it was round faced with a square encasement, all of which was brass, it was marked on the face, North, South, East and West in heavy lettering. I particularly noticed that the compass had no 'fingers'.

When the bidding stated (sic) I noticed another man who was interested in the items (sic) he was smartly dressed, I would say in his middle forties, he was interested in the photographs. I noticed that his collar and tie were immaculate and I think he was a Military man.

This man bid up to L45 and then I bid L50 and the other man dropped out.

At this stage I was given a ticket on which was marked the item number and the price I had bid. I then had to hand this ticket over to the Office and I paid L50. This ticked was stamped. A woman, slim build, aged about 35/40 years dealt with me and she asked me my name, which I gave as P Williams, XXXXXXXXXXXXX I think I gave the number as 47. When I was asked for details about me the name Williams arose because I purchased my

house from a Mr. P Williams, the road name I used is in fact the next street to my mum's address, XXXXXXXXXXXXXX.

I then returned to the Auction Room with my stamped ticket and handed it over to an assistant, a young man, who gave me the Lot I had purchased.

I was then told to return (sic) my ticket to the Office, but I did not do this and left with the Photograph Album and Compass.

When I got the Album and Compass home, I examined it closely, inside the front cover I noticed a makers stamp mark, dated 1908 or 1909. To remove this without trace I soaked the whole of the front cover in Linseed Oil, once the oil was absorbed by the front cover, which took about 2 days to dry out. I even used the heat from the gas oven to assist in the drying out.

I then removed the maker's seal which was ready to fall off. I then took a 'Stanley Knife' and removed all the photographs, and quite a few pages.

I then made a mark 'kidney' shaped, just below centre inside the cover with the Knife.

These last 64 pages inside the Album which Anne and I decided would be the Diary. Anne and I went to town in Liverpool and in Bold Street I bought three pens, that would hold fountain nibs, the little brass nibs. I bought 22 brass nibs at about 7p to 12p, a variety of small brass nibs, all from the 'Medice' art gallery.

This all happened late January 1990 and on the same day that Anne and I bought the nibs we then decided to purchase the ink elsewhere and we decided to make our way to the Bluecoat Chambers, in fact we had a drink in the Empire Pub in Hanover Street on the way.

Anne Barrett and I visited the Bluecoat Chambers Art shop and we purchased a small bottle of Diamine Manuscript ink. I cannot remember the exact price of the Ink. I think it was less than a pound.

We were now ready to go and start the Diary. We went home and on the same evening that we had purchased everything, that is the materials we needed, we decided to have a practice run and we used A4 paper for this, and at first we tried it in my handwriting, but we realised and I must emphasize (sic) this, my handwriting was too (sic) distinctive (sic) so it had

to be in Anne's handwriting, after the practice run which took us approximately two days, we decided to go for hell or bust.

I sat in the living room by the rear lounge window in the corner with my word processor; Anne Barrett sat with her back on to me as she wrote the manuscript. This pose was later filmed by Paul Feldman of MIA Productions Limited.

Several days prior to our purchase of materials I had started to roughly outline the Diary on my word processor.

Anne and I started to write the Diary in all it took us 11 days. I worked on the story and then I dictated it to Anne who wrote it down in the Photograph Album and thus we produced the Diary of Jack the Ripper. Much to my regret there was a witness to this, my young daughter Caroline.

During this period when we were writing the Diary, Tony Devereux was house-bound, very ill and in fact after we completed the Diary we left it for a while with Tony being severely (sic) ill and in fact he died late May early June 1990.

During the writing of the diary of Jack the Ripper, when I was dictating to Anne, mistakes occurred from time to time for example, Page 6 of the diary, 2nd paragraph, line 9 starts with an ink blot, this blot covers a mistake when I told Anne to write down James instead of Thomas. The mistake was covered by the Ink Blot.

Page 226 of the Book, page 20, centre page inverted commas, quote "TURN ROUND THREE TIMES, AND CATCH WHOM YOU MAY". This was from Punch Magazine, 3rd week in September 1888. The journalist was P. W. WENN.

Page 228 of the book, page 22 Diary, centre top verse large ink blot which covers the letter's' which Anne Barrett wrote down by mistake.

Page 250 book, page 44 Diary, centre page, quote: "OH COSTLY INTERCOURSE OF DEATH". This quotation I took from SPHERE HISTORY OF LITERATURE, Volume 2 English Poetry and Prose 1540-1671, Edited by Christopher Ricks, however, Anne Barrett made a mistake when she wrote it down, she should have written down 'O' not 'OH'.

Page 184 in Volume 2 refers (sic).

When I disposed of the photographs from the Album by giving them to William Graham, I kept one back. This photograph was of a Grave, with a Donkey standing nearby. I had actually written the "Jack the Ripper Diary" first on my word processor, which I purchased in 1985, from Dixons in Church Street, Liverpool City Centre. The Diary was on two hard back discs when I had finished it. The Discs, the one Photograph, the compass, all pens and the remainder of the ink was taken by my sister Lynn Richardson to her home address, XXXXXXXXXXXXXX. When I asked her at a later date for the property she informed me that after an article had appeared in the Daily Post, by Harold Brough, she had destroyed everything, in order to protect me.

When I eventually did the deal with Robert Smith he took possession of the Diary and it went right out of my control. There is little doubt in my mind that I have been hoodwinked or if you like conned myself. My inexperience in the Publishing game has been my downfall, whilst all around me are making money, it seems that I am left out of matters, and my Solicitors are now engaged in litigation. I have even had bills to cover expenses incurred by the author of the book, Shirley Harrison.

I finally decided in November 1993 that enough was enough and I made it clear from that time on that the Diary of Jack the Ripper was a forgery, this brought a storm down on me, abuse and threats followed and attacks on my character as Paul Feldman led this attack, because I suppose he had the most to gain from discrediting me.

Mr. Feldman became so obsessed with my efforts to bare the truth of the matter, that he started to threaten me, he took control (sic) of my wife who left me and my child and he rang me up continuously threatening and bullying me and telling me I would never see my family again. On one occasion people were banging on my windows as Feldman threatened my life over the phone. I became so frightened that I sort (sic) the help of a Private Detective Alan Gray and complaints were made to the Police which I understand are still being pursued.

It was about 1st week in December 1994 that my wife Anne Barrett visited me, she asked me to keep my mouth shut and that if I did so I could

receive a payment of L20,000 before the end of the month. She was all over me and we even made love, it was all very odd because just as quickly (sic) as she made love to me she threatened me and returned to her old self. She insisted Mr. Feldman was a very nice Jewish man who was only trying to help her. My wife was clearly under the influence of this man Feldman who I understand had just become separated from his own wife. It seemed very odd to me that my wife who had been hidden in London for long enough by Feldman should suddenly re-appear and work on me for Mr. Feldman.

I have now decided to make this affidavit to make the situation clear with regard to the Forgery of the Jack the Ripper Diary, which Anne Barrett and I did in case anything happens (sic) to me. I would hate to leave at this stage the name of Mr. Maybrick as a tarnished serial killer when as far as I know, he was not a killer.

I am the author of the Manuscript written by my wife Anne Barrett at my dictation which is known as The Jack the Ripper Diary.

I give my name so history do tell what love can do to a gentleman born, Yours Truly -- Michael Barrett.

Sworn at Liverpool in the *(Signed)*

County of Merseyside, this

5th day of January 1995 *Before me: (Signed)*

A Solicitor Empowered to Administer Oaths

D. P. HARDY & CO.

Imperial Chambers,

However on January 26th 1995 he again returned to his solicitor and signed a second affidavit in which he retracted much of what he had said in his first affidavit. This is also reproduced below. The first part of this second affidavit relates to a complaint he made to the police regarding the threats and assaults etc. he had been subjected to which he states made him retract his first affidavit.

Thursday 26th January 1995

MICHAEL BARRETT will say:-

Further to my statement of the 23rd January 1995, I have since contacted the Police and I am told that the Crime No. is 16391.J.95.CR.001, and that this Investigation (sic) has now been allocated to a Detective at Copperas Hill Police Station on 'A' Block.

At this time I am staying at an address that is only known to Mr. Gray because this matter is becoming very serious, I have already had threats, my home attacked, and all this is ledged with the Police, also my phone wires were cut and now I have been beaten up, perhaps when they find me dead one day they might take me seriously.

On Wednesday 18th January 1995 when they all called at my home I was pressurised by them. Feldman's man Skinner came earlier than the others and started a tape recording off and my very words at the beginning (sic) were, "FELDMAN YOU BASTARD GO AND GET FUCKED, BECAUSE YOU ARE A BLOODY BIG MAN WITH A HELL OF A LOT OF MONEY AND AS FAR AS I AM CONCERNED, I WILL NEVER GIVE INTO YOU. I REFUSE TO BE BLACKMAILED". The tape carried on as the other three people arrived, Mrs. Harrison, Sally Evemy, and a man who said, "he was an Independent Adviser". I made reference on Tape that the hatred between Anne Barrett and I must stop. The Independent Advisor never said a word, but the others made it clear to me that if the 'Diary of Jack the Ripper' is genuine I would get my money in June 1995, however due to my Solicitor advising me some time before this meeting, that I had been granted legal aid to take Shirley Harrison to Court, along with Robert Smith and that if I stay quiet I would get my money, so this being the case I decided to collaborate with these people and Anne's story by supporting the Diary, much to my regret but at the time I did not know what to do.

I was also afraid that if Anne and I get arrested for fraud what would happen to our daughter. I did not know who the Independent Advisor was and I felt a serious threat to me either through the Law or if I didn't (sic) conform personal injury maybe. My wife has for the past 12 months kept my daughter away from me and used her to threaten me and blackmail me that I will not see her again if I don't co-operate.

Paul Feldman in June 1994 contacted me by telephone and I quote him "BARRETT I WILL FUCKING GUARANTEE (sic) I WILL DESTROY YOU

AND YOU WILL NOT SEE YOUR (sic) WIFE AND DAUGHTER, EVER AGAIN".

This is the type of pressure I have been under and there is no doubt in my mind that Paul Feldman in particular wants me dead.

I should inform you that I actually worked as a Barman in the Post House Public House about 7 years ago and I gained a full knowledge of the history of the old pub, and I decided when writing the Diary that I would put the name Post House in knowing full well that it had been called the 'Muck Midden' in the 1800's. This fact could actually be established and in particularly by me should I later need to prove what I had done.

I am ready now should it be necessary to speak to the Detectives from Scotland Yard who saw me some time ago. Detective Thomas.

When writing the Diary Devereux was a tremendous help to Anne and I but we did not go to anyone else for advice in the matter.

I know it's old hat and I am sick of trying to convince people about it but the truth is I wrote the Diary of Jack the Ripper and my wife Anne Barrett transcribed it onto the old photograph Album.

I should also mention that because of personal injury to my right hand and arm I now sign as best I can with my left hand.

Signed: M. Barrett (practically illegible)

The major stumbling blocks with regards to Barrett's account as given in his initial affidavit are firstly, with regards to Barrett as a person. He has been described by many who knew him as being somewhat illiterate and not deemed capable of carrying out such a detailed and complicated exercise, as the forgery of the diary would have required. Clearly as can be seen he did state he did not carry out this task alone.

Furthermore, it was discovered that in 1992 a newspaper advert appeared in H.P. Bookfinders purportedly placed by Barrett seeking a Victorian Diary, the advertisement read: "*Unused or partly used diary dating from 1880-1890, must have at least 20 blank pages.*". I don't think for one minute Barrett himself placed this ad, I think it was place by A.N. Other, and another example of perhaps Barrett being manipulated by another

person or persons. This action of placing such an advertisement clearly shows intent by someone, having regard to what followed in 1993 when the diary was first released into the public domain and what was contained in the first affidavit.

Further enquiries reveal that in fact Barrett went to the solicitors with a pre-prepared statement, which was simply transcribed into an affidavit by the solicitor. That being said it can clearly be seen that whoever drafted that statement for him was a person who was well educated and clearly by the content had to have had direct involvement in the forging of the diary. So of course I have to ask who prepared it for him?

On another note, not wanting to cast any aspersions. D.P. Hardy the Liverpool solicitor who acted for Barrett was struck off the solicitors register from practicing in 2003 for a number of offences of improper practice.

I have no doubt that there was perhaps some form of conspiracy involving some of the persons whose names appear throughout the investigation. I suspect there may have been others who have as yet not been named. However, the passage of time has not been kind to the question of ascertaining conclusively who the persons responsible for forging the diary were. Three of the main persons, Tony Deveraux, Melvyn Harris and Paul Feldman all of whom had direct involvement with Barrett are now deceased.

The police did become involved in a criminal investigation but I am led to believe that this wasn’t helped by a number of complainants subsequently withdrawing their complaints. The failure of the police to be allowed to carry out a full criminal investigation has not helped in trying to fully establish whether or not the diary is genuine or a fake and if the latter then who was responsible?

James Maybrick died on May 11th 1889 from arsenic poisoning. His wife was subsequently accused of murdering him. As has been documented following his death there were the two further prostitute murders in Whitechapel, Alice McKenzie and Frances Coles both of which were thought by the police to have been the work of Jack the Ripper.

So was James Maybrick Jack the Ripper or responsible for any of the murders? The answer is no. Did James Maybrick write the diary? In my opinion no he didn't. However, there are those who still seek to suggest the diary is authentic, despite it being proved that the handwriting in the diary has been compared to the handwriting of Maybrick's will and they are different. Those believers in the authenticity of the diary will argue the fact that the reason for this is that Maybrick did not write his own will out.

WALTER RICHARD SICKERT

Walter Sickert the famous British painter only emerged as a suspect in recent years when in 1993 US crime novelist, Patricia Cornwell, took it upon herself to investigate Sickert as a Ripper suspect. Sickert was first mentioned with regards to the Royal Conspiracy theory. At the time of the murders Sickert would have been 28.

Cornwell suggests that in his early painting days Sickert frequented the slums of London's East End and is alleged to have had a number of secret rented studios in that area. This was never proved, but it was a fact that he did have rented studios in the Camden area of North London. Sickert's models for his paintings were said to be poor, unattractive female prostitutes. One such painting, which added to Patricia Cornwell's suspicions was the "*Camden Town Murder"*. This was painted by Sickert in 1908. This painting she suggests bears some similarity to the original murder scene of Mary Kelly. However, this painting was not painted until many years after the murders and the Mary Kelly original murder scene picture would have been readily available then as it is today. If one looks at the general painting style of Sickert it can be seen that he has painted a number of pictures whereby males are seen in company with semi-clad females in room and bedrooms, so the picture Cornwell refers to is not unique.

Patricia Cornwell believed that Sickert was also responsible for the writing of a number of Ripper letters sent to the police during the time of the murders. She thought that if she could obtain DNA from letters believed to have been sent by the Ripper, she could compare them with letters known to have been written by Sickert, as well as trying to extract a DNA profile from any of the letters.

She came to London with her own team of forensic experts. She was given permission to examine the Ripper letters now contained in The National Archives at Kew. However, she discovered that the letters had been heat sealed under plastic to preserve them, a process that degrades primary DNA. None of the letters had any trace of any DNA, primary or secondary. She then came into possession of a letter that, strangely enough, had not been handed over to the archives and had not been heat sealed so was suitable for DNA examination. When tested there was no trace of any primary DNA.

In an attempt to acquire a DNA sample of Sickert, Cornwell purchased some of Sickert's paintings and purportedly tore them apart, examining the frames and canvas for fingerprints or traces of blood, but found nothing. It was the same story with his painting table. Cornwell will argue that the paintings were damaged when she acquired them.

So do her suspicions surrounding Sickert stand up to close scrutiny? Well there are unconfirmed reports that suggest Sickert was not even in the country at the time of some of the murders. It is believed that he was in France painting between August and October 1888. Although Cornwell states that Sickert was a man of mystery and not even his close friends knew where he was at any one time, but she has failed to produce evidence to support this. She even suggests that he could have left France unnoticed and come to England, committed the murders and then travelled back unnoticed. Despite all the hard work and expense she went to, her experts were unable to prove that Walter Sickert was the author of any Ripper letters.

So what can be deduced from her research and findings? She did in the first instance set out to prove or disprove some interesting theories and she was the first person to actually use modern-day forensic science in an attempt to solve the crimes. For this I have to commend her.

Many researchers into these crimes like me have wondered whether it was possible to extract useable DNA from any of the documents left behind in the archives. Well we now know it is possible, equally we know that without any comparison samples any results would be worthless, which turned out to be the case with Cornwell's examinations.

Since the publication of her book, "*Jack the Ripper - Portrait of a Killer*" I am led to believe that she has been continuing her quest to prove some involvement of Sickert in the letters and the murders. As far as my investigation is concerned I can find no evidence to connect Walter Sickert to any of the murders or the letters.

ROBERT MANN

In October 2009 the Jack the Ripper bandwagon rolled into town yet again with the publication of a new book titled, "*Jack the Ripper: Quest for a Killer*" and an accompanying television documentary based on the book titled, "*Jack the Ripper: Killer Revealed*".

The book was written by author Meirion Trow, who had published one previous Ripper book in 1997, "*The Many Faces of Jack the Ripper*". In that original book he stated he believed the Ripper would never be identified. However, in his new book he puts forward a new name as being the prime suspect. In what in my opinion is clearly another case of a wild speculative uncorroborated theory, where he suggests a male by the name of Robert Mann was Jack the Ripper.

Mann was 52 years of age at the time of the murders. He was a pauper and a resident in the Whitechapel workhouse. Mann worked as the mortuary keeper at the Whitechapel workhouse mortuary where the bodies of Chapman and Nichols were taken and the post-mortems carried out.

Trow's suspicion is based on a number of facts. The first being, that at the inquest of Annie Chapman it was suggested that someone with anatomical knowledge had committed the murder and removed the uterus. The second being that the knife used could have been similar to that used in a post-mortem room. The third being that Mann fits the psychological profile provided by the FBI in the 1980s. But then again so did half the population of Whitechapel at the time.

Trow is not able put forward any motives for Mann to be the perpetrator of these crimes, but allows a professor to suggest the murders were sexually motivated, and that continued when Mann was able to gain more sexual satisfaction by undressing his victims at the mortuary. I know of many cases of serial killers revisiting the bodies of their victims after the murders, but have never heard of the victims revisiting their killer!

Furthermore, Trow is not able to show any history of violence by Mann or any incidents involving violence against women. As to the type of person Mann was, at the Nichols inquest, coroner Wynne Baxter noted that Robert Mann was subject to fits and that his statements were “hardly reliable”. The coroner went onto say: “*The time has surely come when the police stations of the metropolis shall have proper mortuaries attached to them so that the help of epileptic paupers* (referring to Robert Mann) *warranted to forget what they have done shall not be brought into requisition.*”

Other very important issues he fails to cover are in relation to the removal of the organs of the victims. Did Mann remove them at the mortuary? And if so for what purpose, or did he remove them on the street after killing the victims and if so what happened to them? Other unanswered questions are, how was Mann able to come and go all hours of the day and night from the workhouse? In Victorian times workhouses were run almost like prisons with the doors being locked at night and staff being on duty to ensure no one left and no unauthorised persons gained entry. As previously stated Mann was a pauper. It is a known fact that the victims would not have gone with the killer unless they had seen the colour of his money in advance. Mann would not have being in that financial position being a pauper.

Trow also suggests that the murder of Alice McKenzie in 1889 was his last murder and this was due to him suffering from tuberculosis from which he died in 1896. McKenzie was not murdered in the same fashion as some of the other victims and experts are divided as to whether she was a Ripper victim. Her body was not subjected to the same mutilations as previous victims. Trow suggest that his debilitating illness prevented him carrying out the mutilations. I would suggest that had Mann been suffering from tuberculosis in 1889 he would most certainly have died from that illness long before 1896.

In summing-up the case against Robert Mann from an evidential point of view there is not one scrap of what can be described as “evidence” to confirm Trow’s suspicion. In my opinion Mann should not even be looked upon as a viable suspect.

CHARLES LE GRAND

In June 2010 an American Ripperologist Tom Westcott published an article in one of several Ripper monthly online magazines titled, "*Casebook Examiner*". The article was titled, "*Le Grand the New Prime Suspect*". In the article after lengthy research Westcott suggests that Charles Le Grand was in fact Jack the Ripper.

I decided to peruse the article and to assess and evaluate the content. After all the title suggested the author had obtained sufficient and overwhelmingly irrefutable evidence to point to a new prime Ripper suspect.

So what is known of Charles Le Grand? It is believed he was apparently born in Denmark in 1849, making him aged thirty-nine at the time of the Whitechapel murders. He was known to use many different names among these were Charles Grand, Charles Grant, Christian Nielson, Christian Nelson, Captain Anderson, and Christian Briscony. I will refer to him throughout as Le Grand. He spoke several different languages and was apparently well educated.

Le Grand had a long criminal history with offences recorded as far back as 1877 when he was convicted for a series of thefts and sentenced to eight years penal servitude, followed by seven years police probation. He was convicted in the name of Christian Nelson and released in May 1884. He then apparently was responsible for a series of criminal deceptions by obtaining monies from women on the promise of marriage only to disappear with their money.

He surfaced again in London in 1886 when he formed a relationship with a female who was to be his constant companion, living together as man and wife. Her name was Amelia Marie Demay aka Amelia Pourquoi she also used many different aliases and was of dubious character and known to the police. She was approximately 28 years of age and a known prostitute.

Demay and Le Grand set up house together, which they later turned into a brothel. It is then suggested that Le Grand threatened violence towards any other prostitutes working within their area who were not under his or Amelia's control, and on many occasions purportedly inflicted violence upon them, forcing them to either join their operation or move away leaving

the path clear for clients to use their prostitutes. As time progressed Le Grand would later employ others to do this work for him.

Between 1888 and 1889, Le Grand was involved in the running of a private detective agency, working from his home address, before taking an office in the Strand in the heart of central London. The name of the agency was *"Le Grand and Co"*.

In September 1888 Le Grand and his partner in the agency John Batchelor were employed by the Whitechapel Vigilance Committee to investigate the Whitechapel murders. During this time Westcott suggests that Le Grand and his partner were actively involved in the training of volunteers from the Whitechapel Vigilance Group and even went out on patrol with them at night. However, I can find no evidence to corroborate this.

During their investigations and their involvement with the Vigilance Group, Le Grand and Batchelor were instrumental in finding a witness in the Stride case namely Mathew Packer who supposedly saw Stride with a male person shortly before her death and was able to give a description of that man. It has been suggested that this could have in fact been her killer. However, Packer was later interviewed by the police and gave conflicting evidence to them. To this day Packer's evidence has been looked upon as being totally unreliable and may have been part of a conspiracy orchestrated by Le Grand.

In June 1889 he and Amelia Marie Demay and others were charged with conspiracy to extort money from a prominent doctor. He received a two-year prison sentence for these offences and Amelia eighteen-months hard labour.

He was released from prison in 1891 but after a short time he was again arrested, this time under the name of Charles Grant for blackmailing several elderly wealthy ladies by sending letters threatening that they would be murdered unless they paid large sums of money. Needless to say none met the demands and contacted the police on receipt of the letters.

None of the death threats involved the suggestion that the victims would have their throats cut and then disembowelled and organs removed. The threats related to blowing them up using dynamite. Le Grand was not averse

to using force as has been previously stated. When he was arrested at a railway station he had in his possession a revolver, a cosh and a set of knuckledusters. He also attempted to push one of the arresting officers under a train as it entered the station. Following his arrest his house was searched and police found a home-made explosive device rigged to a cigar tin, gunpowder, and two bottles of acid.

Following a lengthy trial Le Grand was sentenced to twenty years hard labour for blackmail and a further seven years for attempted fraud.

At the conclusion of the article Westcott sets out a number of facts he seeks to rely on to suggest Le Grand could have been Jack the Ripper. I will comment on the important ones individually, Westcott's facts are written in italics.

He states: "*Le Grand was cruel, vicious, violent, accurately described himself as "void of all human feeling"; he lived for years off prostitutes and took joy in beating them in the open street."*

It has to be accepted that the Ripper was cruel, vicious and violent towards his prostitute victims. The assaults documented by Westcott all took place in and around central London, and the prostitutes involved were of a much higher class than the prostitutes of Whitechapel. All the Whitechapel murders took place in the dead of night away from the public eye. Le Grand's violence towards prostitutes was to either force them to work for him or to frighten them away from his area and most of this occurred in daylight hours sometimes in full view of the public. There is no evidence to suggest any of the Ripper victims were under the control of a pimp or worked in a brothel, or ever came in contact with Le Grand.

"Le Grand alone would have known the whereabouts on any night of the WVC patrolmen, as he was in charge of placing them. Through his police contacts he would also know the beats of policemen in any area of London."

There is no evidence to suggest the Ripper knew or used this information to his advantage in the commission of the murders.

"Le Grand, because of his status as a Private Investigator and his position with the WVC, could have, and did walk the streets of the East End

with impunity. If stopped by a constable, he would not be detained."

During the height of these murders many people would have been stopped and spoken to by the police and allowed to go lawfully on their way. Although Le Grand was working at the time as a private detective he was known to the police as a prolific criminal and had he been stopped and checked it would have perhaps been recorded. Conversely, if you were a killer on the prowl for a victim the last thing you want to happen is to get stopped and checked by the police, you would want to avoid all possible contact with not only the police but anyone who might subsequently identify you...

"The WVC met at the Crown Tavern at 74 Mile End Road, a short distance from Berner Street, the scene of the Stride murder. They let out for patrol after midnight. This means that we can accurately place Le Grand in the very neighbourhood in which Stride was murdered at the very hour of her murder."

Berner Street was a totally different murder location to all the other victims, there were many men and women still coming and going at the time of the murder. The International Working Men's Club was also packed with men. It is not known where Le Grand was at the time of the murder.

Westcott asks the question, "*Why spend his evenings training recruits and his nights walking the dark, wet streets of the East End when he could have been at his gambling den or his brothel, surrounded by beautiful (comparatively speaking) women?"*

Le Grand was hired as a private detective to investigate the murders. There is no evidence to show he ever went out on patrol, or was ever in the location of Berner Street at the time of the murder there. It should also be noted that Le Grand's place of residence at the time was 3, York Place, Baker Street which is located in North West London some five miles from Whitechapel.

"Le Grand, alone among the suspects, possessed a collection of knives and was alleged to have been skilled in the use of them" he suggests, *"Le Grand was skilled in the use of a knife."*

He was not the only suspect to have possessed a knife Carl Feigenbaum who I will later refer to possessed a long-bladed knife and used that knife to murder a woman in New York in Ripper-like fashion. The knives Westcott refers to were mentioned by a manservant who stated amongst his duties he was responsible for cleaning Le Grand's knives. Of all the various assortment of weapons Le Grand has had in his possession or under his control he has never been seen with a knife or to have used a knife in any act of violence.

Westcott refers to the "*Dear Boss Letter"* and quotes "*Grand work the last job was…"* He suggests that Le Grand committed the murder and then sent the letter giving a hidden clue. However, as far as the letters are concerned most experienced researchers including myself believe all the letters were hoaxes. However, it is not to say that Le Grand did not write one or more of them. However, that would not make him the killer.

Westcott goes to great length throughout the article to emphasize that he was the prime police suspect but is unable to put forward any motive Le Grand may have had for committing the murders. Furthermore there is no mention of Le Grand in any official police record or file relative to the murders, nor has his name been mentioned by any police officer in their memoirs, as have other suspects. I contacted Tom Westcott and he does now agree that there is no corroboration to his suggestion that he was a prime police suspect.

In concluding, Tom Westcott must be commended for his thorough research into Le Grand although it should be noted that he is not the first to take more than a passing interest in Le Grand. Other Ripper researchers Gerry Nixon and Paul Begg have in past years also investigated Le Grand, neither have been able to prove his involvement.

Le Grand is an interesting character, but was he Jack the Ripper? On what has been put forward to date the answer is no. However, like with all the other previously named and discussed suspects, one day that final piece of damning evidence may surface and then the Ripper jigsaw will finally be complete. Until that day we can only wait, and wonder.

AARON KOSMINSKI

Aaron Kosminski has been regarded by many researchers as a prime suspect but is there any evidence to support this? Aaron Kosminski has been regarded as the Kosminski likely suspect named by Sir Melville Macnaghten in his 1894 memorandum in which he refers to Kosminski by surname only and describes this suspect as follows:

"Kosminski -- a Polish Jew -- & resident in Whitechapel. This man became insane owing to many years indulgence in solitary vices. He had a great hatred of women, especially of the prostitute class, & had strong homicidal tendencies: he was removed to a lunatic asylum about March 1889. There were many circumstances connected with this man, which made him a strong 'suspect'."

However, it should be noted that in another later document known as, "*The Aberconway Version*" also written by Macnaghten he exonerates the Kosminski he previously mentioned. This document will be discussed in a later chapter.

It was not until 1987 that Martin Fido a Ripper researcher and historian discovered Aaron Kosminski after searching asylum records. However, Fido soon discovered that the antecedents of Aaron Kosminski did not match those of Macnaghten's Kosminski suspect.

For a start Aaron Kosminski was not incarcerated in an asylum on a permanent basis until 1891 where he remained until his death in 1919. There was no evidence to suggest he had a hatred of prostitutes, or that he ever associated with prostitutes. He never ever showed any homicidal tendencies. In 1889 Aaron Kosminski did have one short spell in the workhouse due to his insane behaviour. However, he had no criminal convictions.

Aaron Kosminski was a Polish Jew and lived with his family in Whitechapel and was in his early years a barber by profession. At the time of the murders he was aged twenty-five. A number of witness statements were taken from persons who are alleged to have seen different males with the victims prior to their death. But none of these witnesses ever describe seeing anyone as young as twenty-five. Aaron was never known to have worn a hat as described by some witnesses in their statements.

Prior to his final long-term incarceration Aaron Kosminski was known to continually masturbate in public and eat out of the gutter. It is believed that what led up to his final incarceration in 1891 was an incident whereby he is alleged to have threatened his sister with a knife.

Many researchers also rely on two other sources in support of Aaron Kosminski being a viable Ripper suspect and corroborate Macnaghten's entry in his memorandum. One of these being a book published in 1910 by Sir Robert Anderson titled, "*The lighter side of my official life"* in which he refers to an identification procedure which is alleged to have taken place whereby the "suspect" who was the subject of this procedure was said to have been a Polish Jew.

Anderson in his book states that the witness a Jewish male made a positive identification of the suspect as being Jack the Ripper but this witness was not prepared to give evidence as the suspect identified was also a Jew and that his evidence would lead to the execution of another Jew. Anderson does not expand on this explanation. Anderson makes no mention of where the identification took place, who the witness was and even more importantly who the suspect was.

However, it is written in the Torah which is the name given to the first five books of the Jewish bible, that a Jew cannot be put to death without the testimony of two eyewitnesses both of them religiously observant Jews. In this case the Jewish witness should have known that a fellow Jew would not be executed on the testimony of only one person. This is why the witness may have refused to testify.

I have to ask who this witness could have been. Throughout the whole investigation there were only ever two witnesses who one can say gave any reasonable descriptions of persons seen with any of the victims. The first was Israel Schwartz who allegedly saw a man with Liz Stride and the other being Joseph Lawende who saw a man with a woman believed to have been Eddowes at the entrance to Church Passage a short time before her body was discovered. No one ever saw the murders being committed.

In any event these descriptions cannot safely be relied upon due to the time of the night, the lighting conditions and the distance between witness and possible suspect and of course the lengthy time gap between 1888 and

1890/91 when it is believed this identification procedure is alleged to have taken place.

In relation to identification parades in today's criminal justice system it is generally accepted that a witness has to make a positive identification. An identification made whereby a witness states, "I think it could be him" would not be classed as a positive identification.

If this identification procedure ever did take place then the witness could have only been Israel Schwartz. The Stride murder came under the jurisdiction of the Metropolitan Police and it was they who had organized this identification procedure, who it would seem, knew nothing of the suspect nor of the identification taking place.

I do find it strange that the officers of the City Police were not actively involved in this process, after all Joseph Lawende had given them a suspect description in relation to the Eddowes murder, and if one witness was going to try to identify a suspect why not let the second witness attempt to do the same?

It is normal practice to bring all the witnesses together where practicable for just one procedure. If Schwartz had been the witness and did make a positive identification then at best the police would have only finished up with weak circumstantial evidence in relation to only one murder in the series, that of Stride, a murder, which in fact may not have even been committed by the same killer who had been responsible for killing the other victims.

Anderson in his book makes no mention of the suspect's name or the name of the witness, or where this identification is supposed to have taken place. In his book he wrote that he would have named his suspect but for fear of libel action and that no public benefit would occur. However, the publishers of Anderson's book had categorically stated that they would be willing to pay for any costs should a libel case ever be brought. So what reason could Anderson give for not naming the suspect, or the witness, or where it took place?

The other source to suggest this identification procedure took place comes from what has become known as, "*The Swanson Marginalia"* which are pencil annotations purported to have been written by Chief Inspector

Donald Swanson in Anderson's book in later years. I will discuss this marginalia in greater detail in another chapter but to briefly summarize. Swanson in these written annotations goes some way to corroborate in part what Anderson had written, but Swanson goes one step further and actually refers to the surname only of the suspect, that being Kosminski. He also makes no mention of the name of the witness.

In the annotations Swanson states that Kosminski was taken with great difficulty to a seaside home, believed to be Brighton and then after being positively identified by the witness was taken back to his brother's home in Whitechapel where he was then watched by the City Police, and sometime thereafter taken by his family to Stepney Workhouse and then to Colney Hatch Lunatic Asylum.

There are contradictions between Swanson and Anderson. Swanson wrote that the suspect was identified and then incarcerated, whilst Anderson wrote that the suspect was incarcerated and then identified.

From my investigation up until this point I was now firmly of the opinion that Aaron Kosminski's status as a Ripper suspect was poorly deserved, having analysed closely Anderson's references in his book, and the content of "*The Marginalia*".

In a further attempt to confirm my belief I then examined in great detail the police methods and procedures as dictated by the Victorian Criminal Justice system in 1888. Many of which I have discussed in the previous entry regarding Francis Tumblety.

In order to put things into perspective we first have to go back and look again at the police powers and procedures in 1888. The police had a lawful right to question anyone at any time whilst gathering evidence following the commission of a crime. This may also include and involve speaking to a person who may later become a suspect. However, the police guidelines state that as soon as that person becomes a suspect and is "*Charged/arrested*" no more questions can be put to him.

The offence of murder was classed as a felony and the police had the power to arrest anyone without a warrant. That arrest however would have warranted reasonable suspicion or direct evidence. A person so arrested

would have been then taken to a police station and the facts together with any corroborating evidence relayed to a station Sgt or Inspector.

That officer would have to either accept that "*charge*" against that person on the basis that there was a prima facie case and then that person would be formally charged with the offence providing there was sufficient evidence, and then detained and taken before the next available court. If there was not sufficient evidence then the accused would be "*discharged"* (released). It should be noted that the police did not conduct formal interviews of persons arrested in 1888.

The second option open to the police having so arrested a person on suspicion would be for the arrested person to be detained at the police station without formal charge for up to twenty-four hours for further enquiries to be carried out with a view to the police perhaps obtaining enough evidence to be able to subsequently prefer a "*charge"*.

At the expiration of that time or before if applicable, the arrested person would either be formally "*charged"* and detained to appear at the next available court or released *(discharged)*. As previously stated if released without charge the police would still have the power to rearrest should new evidence come to light. In 1888 there was no legislation in place for the police to grant police bail for an accused to return back to a police station at a given date and time in the future, and therefore no powers to arrest anyone for failing to reappear.

So how viable a suspect was the Kosminski named by Macnaghten and Swanson if they were one and the same? Was he a likely suspect, a prime suspect or simply a person who came under suspicion by reason of an offence he had committed or by his conduct in unrelated matters? What was the reasonable suspicion to warrant and justify any alleged police action being taken against a person named Kosminski?

The answer to both questions is 'none'. There is no official record of anyone named Kosminski ever being arrested in connection with these murders, and no official records to show what grounds there were for the Kosminski suspect named by Swanson and Macnaghten to be looked upon as a likely suspect.

Whatever information which led to a person named Kosminski allegedly being the subject of an identification procedure in connection with the murders would appear to have come in either 1890 or 1891, two and three years respectively after the murder of Mary Kelly who some say was the last Ripper victim.

As far as Aaron Kosminski is concerned, one might argue that the incident whereby he threatened his sister with a knife may well have brought him to the attention of the police in 1891 having regard to the fact that up until then they had no clues as to the identity of Jack the Ripper and would have still been desperate to solve the case. But even this incident with the knife was not the subject of an official police report. It appeared in his asylum record and was direct information given to the asylum by his relatives who were ultimately responsible for having him certified and detained in 1891.

In any event, any such information obtained all those years later would have to be carefully scrutinized. So what official action did the police take or should have taken with this named suspect Kosminski under the powers they had between 1888 and 1891? Clearly whatever it was they didn't arrest him or that would have surely been mentioned by Anderson in his book and by Swanson in the highly contentious marginalia in which he stated, "*the suspect was taken with great difficulty to a seaside home"*. I have to ask what the great difficulty was? Taken could have two meanings, one by force or the other as a volunteer, both I will expand on in due course.

Researchers who strongly support the suspect named Kosminski keep using the "old chestnut" that official police records could have existed but have not survived due to either being lost, destroyed, or stolen, I am sorry to say I don't subscribe to any of those views. Something as important as arresting a suspect for these crimes would not have passed unnoticed by the press in any event, and any such press articles published are likely to still been in existence today.

Furthermore, all the police personnel who would have been involved directly or indirectly would have knowledge of such an arrest or such an identification procedure and would have no doubt talked about this, and no doubt discussed this important issue with the press or family members etc. over the ensuing years. Not to mention any staff at the seaside home where

this is alleged to have taken place. There is absolutely nothing save for the name Kosminski being mentioned by Sir Melville Macnaghten in his 1894 memorandum, and Anderson only stating that this person subjected to the identification parade was a Polish Jew, and Swanson corroborating this by naming Kosminski who was in fact a Polish Jew.

I have to say that right from the outset I do not believe this identification procedure ever took place in the way it has been described by Swanson and Anderson. In an attempt to disprove all of this I will play devil's advocate using my knowledge of Victorian police procedures and practices and the gathering of the best evidence possible principal.

I will discuss the various options, which would have been open to the police both lawfully and unlawfully at the time.

The first would be the arrest if in fact there was ever such an arrest. If however they did arrest anyone named Kosminski where did that take place? Could it have been from that person's home and then they conveyed him straight to the seaside home? If they had done that it would have been against protocol and would without a doubt prejudiced any later prosecution. Not to mention the question of his mental status at that time if that arrest related to Aaron Kosminski, or in fact one of the other men named by Martin Fido; David Cohen and Nathan Kaminsky.

Had they officially arrested Aaron Kosminski or any other named Kosminski it would and should have been recorded in official records. If the police had arrested anyone on suspicion and taken them to a police station and intended to utilize the full twenty-four hours, it may have been possible for them to have taken that person in custody from the police station under escort to the location where the identification parade was going to take place. However, that would have necessitated a great deal of police organization and manpower and much paperwork, and would still have needed documenting.

It would not have been normal police practice to take a suspect such a long way to take part in an identification procedure. It was customary for witnesses to attend a police station. Records show that the police were conducting regular and normal identification procedures at police stations in and around Whitechapel in 1888, procedures which involved a line up of at

least eight volunteers of persons fitting the same description as the suspect as was required by law.

This type of identification procedure is always the first procedure to consider. It seems they may have bypassed this procedure in favour of what is commonly called a direct confrontation, which is simply placing the suspect before the witness and asking the question "*Is this the man etc. etc.?"* why, they chose this procedure we do not know, but they should have known that any positive identification made from such a procedure would struggle to stand up in court.

I have to ask what made them do this, because they would surely have known that using the direct confrontation procedure would be almost worthless from an evidential standpoint when clearly they had the option to conduct a full parade. Of course the other important part of this is that it would appear that it wasn't until after the procedure had taken place and the witness had made his identification that they were apparently made aware that the witness was not prepared to go to court to give evidence.

With them not knowing this at the time the parade took place, they would have totally jeopardized their case by using a direct confrontation procedure. Had they used the accepted procedure and the witness had picked him out, and had agreed to testify, they might have had a case, albeit weak and reliant on identification, which on its own would perhaps not stand up to close scrutiny given the passage of time between the witness allegedly seeing the suspect and the time the witness made the identification but nevertheless sufficient to perhaps bring a person to trial but may not be enough to secure a conviction.

So another scenario to consider is that could the police have decided not to arrest the Kosminski suspect but approached him and asked if he would accompany them on a voluntary basis to the seaside home and allow himself to be subjected to an identification procedure, on the grounds that he was suspected of being Jack the Ripper. Would he have consented and gone voluntarily? No.

With regards specifically to Aaron Kosminski would his family even had allowed him to go? I think that is most unlikely. Faced with this situation of non-compliance, the police would either have had to abandon the procedure

or there and then formally arrest that person and then continue with the procedures following arrest as I have previously mentioned.

The police without making a formal arrest would not have had the power to simply drag anyone away screaming and shouting. From a practical and legal standpoint taking anyone by force without him being arrested would have been unlawful and again anything that happened thereafter would have been thrown out of court if it ever had got to that stage.

Consent would be the important factor in considering this scenario and was legally defined as: *"Consent is the permission to do a certain act freely given, without force, fraud, or threats, by a rational and sober person, so situated as to be able to form an independent opinion upon the matter to which he consents."*

As can be seen anyone suffering with a mental disease like Aaron Kosminski or David Cohen would not be classed as rational and therefore not capable of perhaps understanding what was taking place and certainly not capable of giving rational consent.

So is there yet another scenario to discuss? If one rules out arrest, and the suggestion that this suspect named Kosminski went of his own free will. The only other scenario would have been if the Kosminski suspect had been incarcerated in a workhouse or asylum at the time. It is known that Aaron Kosminski had two spells in the workhouse due to his insane behaviour. The first time was in July 1890 and again in February 1891 six days before the murder of Frances Coles.

If Aaron Kosminski or any other Kosminski was the suspect referred to by Swanson could the identification parade have taken place whilst they were in the workhouse in either 1890 or 1891? Anderson wrote that the suspect was incarcerated and then identified.

If this were in anyway a plausible scenario then the police would first have to have had the permission of the workhouse/asylum authorities to remove that person, or allow him to be the subject of an identification procedure. Given the reasons for anyone being incarcerated in such an establishment I think that is highly unlikely. The issue would still have revolved around consent. It would be argued that a person suffering from a mental illness is incapable of giving consent by reason of their illness, and

would certainly not be capable of understanding the events leading up to and surrounding such an important identification procedure.

In any event if all the aforementioned factors were satisfied it would have been more practical to conduct an identification procedure at the workhouse/asylum. This specific scenario does not stand up to close scrutiny because if Swanson is to be believed, he writes in the marginalia that on return from the seaside home the suspect was taken back to his brother's house in Whitechapel and watched by the City Police. Had he been taken from the workhouse/asylum he would have to have been taken back to the workhouse/asylum, unless of course had the suspect been in their care and was discharged into the custody of the police.

What Swanson writes is almost incomprehensible. According to him it would seem the police had in their grasp one of the most infamous serial killers in our criminal history having been identified by a witness, and they do no more than take him back to his brother's house as if he they had been out on a normal day at the seaside, and then allow officers from another police force to watch him at a house which may even have been under their own jurisdiction.

In considering the aforementioned scenario, what were the options open to the police on their return back to Whitechapel? If they were that sure of his guilt, but were not able to prosecute him, in an effort to ensure he could not kill again they could have simply had him certified as being insane and sent forthwith to an asylum.

Another option would have been that with having the suspect's sanity not questioned and him being in sound mind and body and in the knowledge that he had been identified as Jack the Ripper, and had gone voluntarily, the police could have then formally arrested him and taken him back to a police station where it is possible that if the suspect was the killer and him knowing he had been identified he may then perhaps made at some point a statement or made admissions. The police would not have needed to have told him the witness would not go to court to testify, and in any event the police would have still have had the twenty-four hours.

Having regards to my overall investigation into the suspect named Kosminski who many suggest is Aaron Kosminski. In my opinion this

identification procedure did not ever take place, and the police officers in later years may have confused this with a similar identification procedure they carried out with Thomas Sadler, a suspect in the Frances Coles murder in 1891.

But even that suggestion doesn't totally stand up to scrutiny. With regards to Sadler's identification parade, there is nothing recorded in official files. A brief account was recorded in a newspaper but the name of the witness was not given. In that short press article there was no suggestion he was taken anywhere and Sadler did not have a brother who lived in the vicinity of Whitechapel.

If Aaron Kosminski was ever a likely suspect then that suspicion must have been removed totally in 1891 with the murder of Frances Coles, as her murder took place six days after he was finally incarcerated for good in an asylum and Swanson was directly involved in that case and at that time the police were still seeking the Ripper. So that in itself causes concern over the authenticity of The Marginalia and the viability of Aaron Kosminski being Jack the Ripper.

I find it hard to accept that despite Macnaghten exonerating his likely named suspect Kosminski, researchers still continue to champion a man named Kosminski as a viable suspect. Clearly the official facts and existing records also eliminate him. Set out below is the chronology and details from the official records:

Aaron Kosminski was admitted to Mile End Old Town Workhouse, 12th July 1890, from 3, Sion Square, Whitechapel. He was deemed to be able-bodied but insane.

Three days later [15th July 1890] he was discharged into the care of his brother [in-law] Woolf, at 16, Greenfield Street. This would suggest that after spending three days at the workhouse he was not deemed to be a lunatic or insane and in need of further detention and there was no need to take him before a justice at this time to have him certified.

Nothing more is heard of Aaron Kosminski for six months until Wednesday 4th February 1891 he was readmitted to the Mile End Old Town Workhouse from 16, Greenfield Street, Whitechapel. This undisputed fact also goes to eliminate Aaron Kosminski.

The Marginalia annotations state, "*In a very short time the suspect with his hands tied behind his back, he was sent to Stepney Workhouse and then to Colney Hatch and died shortly afterwards."* I would hardly call six months a very short time, and are we to believe that observations were kept on him night and day for six months?

Aaron Kosminski was sent to Mile End Town Workhouse and later to Colney Hatch but he didn't die shortly afterwards. Again there are major flaws in the marginalia and the belief that Aaron Kosminski was the Kosminski named in that document and in the annotations.

On Friday 6th February 1891 Dr. Edmund King Houchin of 23, High Street, Stepney, examined him at the workhouse. Aaron Kosminski was declared of unsound mind and a proper person to be taken charge of and detained under care and treatment. As a result of that Henry Chambers Justice of the Peace, issued a committal order to that effect the same day.

If one examines the notes compiled by Dr. Houchin in his assessment, coming to his final decision he has not only used his own judgment but refers to information given by family members. If at this time Aaron Kosminski was looked upon as a Ripper suspect by the police or believed complicit in any of the murders I would have expected it to have been recorded and used to bolster the grounds for detaining him. After all what better grounds for detention than, "*Believed to be wandering the streets at night committing murders."*?

Ripper researcher and author Martin Fido published a book, "*The Crimes Detection and Death of Jack the Ripper"*, in which he was the first to suggest that Kosminski may have been in fact the Aaron Kosminski known to researchers today. Fido was the first researcher to attempt to identify the Kosminski named in the Macnaghten memorandum. When it became quite clear that the life and times and movements of Aaron Kosminski did not tie up with the Macnaghten Memorandum or the marginalia Fido later suggested that the now known Aaron Kosminski had been wrongly named by the authorities in 1889 following his detention and in fact the entries in both The Marginalia and the Macnaghten Memorandum could refer to Polish Jews David Cohen aka Aaron Davis Cohen or Nathan Kaminsky who could be one and the same.

David Cohen was admitted to Stepney Workhouse on December 21st 1888 having been found wandering the streets unable to care for himself. He was later transferred to Colney Hatch Lunatic Asylum where he remained until his death in October 1889. Whilst in the asylum he showed signs of violence towards his fellow inmates and as a result was segregated. Fido suggests that the authorities could not establish his true identity on arrest and therefore gave him a “John Doe” name of Cohen, which Fido suggests was common practice. However, there are no official records to show this was common practice.

It was used from time to time by immigration authorities both here and in New York. However, Fido’s suggestion doesn’t stand up to close scrutiny by reason of the fact that Cohen apparently had a known address of 86, Leman Street, Whitechapel, and was known to be a tailor, so formally identifying him in my opinion should not have been a major problem. Furthermore, there was a due process of law in 1888 with regards to dealing with insane persons and lunatics.

Following an arrest and after being taken to a workhouse a person could only be lawfully detained for three days and then had to be taken before a justice to determine whether that person should be released or further detained. The Justice of the Peace had the power to authorize a doctor to carry out a full mental assessment.

Having regard to the time he is alleged to have spent incarcerated I would have expected the workhouse and asylum authorities, and the police to make some attempt to identify an allegedly nameless man under their care. After all this unidentified man Fido suggests was given the name Cohen must have been somebody’s son, father or brother and for that person to suddenly disappear without any further trace is almost unimaginable.

With regards to Nathan Kaminsky, he apparently lived in Black Lion Yard, right in the centre of Whitechapel. In March 1888 he was aged 23, he had been diagnosed as syphilitic at the Whitechapel Workhouse Infirmary and admitted on March 24th 1888. He was released and cured from his illness on May 12th the same year. After that he disappears off the face of the earth and no further records can be found of his whereabouts. In a later article on the same topic published by Fido he now makes no mention at all of Nathan Kaminsky. The only tenuous link between the two to suggest

they could be one and the same is their ages in the asylum records; they were both shown as being aged 23.

As has been documented there were two other murders in Whitechapel, which the police believed to have been the work of the Ripper. The first being Alice McKenzie in July 1889 and the second Frances Coles in February 1891. These facts alone, along with other evidence and documents I will discuss in due course, in my opinion eliminates David Cohen or Nathan Kaminsky and Aaron Kosminski from suspicion of being concerned in the Whitechapel murders. Martin Fido's suggestion that the police mixed the names up and were not sure of his true identity thereby naming him Cohen as was standard practice does not stand up to close scrutiny. This renaming was a practice used by USA immigration authorities at the time. I can find no evidence to show that it was used by the police or asylum or workhouse authorities at this relevant time period in this country.

CHAPTER FIVE

THE ABERCONWAY VERSION

In 1959 a Ripper researcher Dan Farson revealed the existence of another version of the Macnaghten memorandum. This has now come to be known as "*The Aberconway Version"*. This copy is purported to have been transcribed from Macnaghten's original notes and was found to be in the possession of Lady Christobel Aberconway the youngest daughter of Sir Melville Macnaghten, who had apparently received it from her elder sister via her mother. This version differs slightly in content from the original, but still refers to the same likely suspects. However, this particular version in its entirety has never been made public although it would appear that most of it had been published in the book, "*The Jack the Ripper A-Z"*.

The Aberconway Version is made up of nine sheets, seven of which are typewritten, which are believed to have been typed, in the opinion of certain researchers, by Lady Aberconway's secretary and compiled from handwritten notes Lady Aberconway stated she copied from her father's original notes. No suspects names appear on these sheets save for one in relation to the murder of Frances Coles.

In addition, there are two handwritten sheet inserts attached to the typed pages and these are again believed, (by amongst others Lady Aberconway's son Christopher McLaren) to have been written by Lady Aberconway herself. Also seen on the typewritten sheets are handwritten annotations, which appear at the end of the handwritten notes and could be written by a different hand. These sheets do contain the names of the "suspects".

The reason being suggested for the exclusion of the suspect names from the typewritten notes are that firstly it was not necessary for the secretary to see the names, and secondly it would cause grave concern to any living descendants should the names be made public. This clearly shows that Lady Aberconway had intended to publish herself or have published these papers in edited form. This is supported by a letter she wrote to The New Statesman in November 1959: *"I possess my father's private notes on Jack the Ripper in which he names three individuals 'against whom police held*

very reasonable suspicion' and states which of these three, in his judgment, was the killer."

If as Lady Aberconway stated that she had copied her father's original notes then what happened to those original notes? These notes looked to have contained much more detail than the accepted official version and I must ask why important and significant facts contained in these newly released documents copied from his original notes were not included by Macnaghten himself in his final memorandum, which is now known as The Scotland Yard version.

I have studied carefully the content of The Aberconway Version and have set out below the significant differences between this and Macnaghten's original Scotland Yard version, adding my comments and observations.

The first point I will discuss relates solely to The Aberconway Version and is to be found on page six of the typewritten sheets. The relevant passage reads: "*No one ever saw the Whitechapel murderer (unless possibly it was the City P. C. who was on a beat near Mitre Square)"*. It is interesting because this suggestion that a police officer perhaps saw the killer on the night of September 30th following the murder of Catherine Eddowes has never been mentioned previously. One has to ask where this information came from and why was it not disclosed previously, and is it at all reliable having regard to the question of reliability of the original Macnaghten memorandum?

The second point I will highlight follows on in typewritten form at the foot of the same page and reads: "I *enumerate the cases of 3 men against whom Police held very…* this sentence is then continued in handwritten form on the first of the attached handwritten sheets and reads: *"reasonable suspicion. Personally, after much careful & deliberate consideration, I am inclined to exonerate the last 2."*

This is a vitally important issue because the last sentence obviously refers to the last two as being Ostrog and Kosminski. The latter being regarded by many researchers and authors as being the prime suspect for Jack the Ripper, and many Ripper authors have over the years published and sold many books suggesting Kosminski was Jack the Ripper. Macnaghten's comment coupled with all the research carried out over the past fifty years

now in my opinion totally eliminates Aaron Kosminski, Nathan Kaminsky, David Cohen or anyone else with similar names.

Staying with The Aberconway Version, also on page six there is a typewritten entry regarding the murder of Frances Coles in 1891. This entry reads: "*Frances Coles in Swallow Gardens on 13th Feb. 1891 for which Thomas Sadler, a Ship's fireman, was arrested, and – after several remands – discharged! It was subsequently ascertained that Sadler had sailed for the Baltic on 19th July '89 and was in Whitechapel on 17th the night when Alice McKenzie was killed. He was a man of ungovernable temper, and entirely addicted to drink and the company of the lowest prostitutes. I have no doubt whatever in my own mind as to his having murdered Frances Coles –*"

In the original memorandum Macnaghten refers to the murder of Frances Coles in this way: "*Frances Coles in Swallow Gardens, on 13th February 1891 - for which Thomas Sadler, a fireman, was arrested, &, after several remands, discharged. It was ascertained at the time that Sadler had sailed for the Baltic on 19th July '89 and was in Whitechapel on the night of 17th. He was a man of ungovernable temper & entirely addicted to drink, & the company of the lowest prostitutes*." There is no mention as to his firm belief that Thomas Sadler was responsible for her murder.

The inclusion of Macnaghten's opinion in the typewritten notes regarding the suspect Sadler in my opinion does not give a lot of credibility to the explanation put forward as to why the other suspect names were omitted from the same typewritten pages, because the police at the time believed her murder was the work of Jack the Ripper and that Sadler was looked upon by the police as being Jack the Ripper.

Further questions surround another entry found in The Aberconway Version, which relates to another Ripper suspect Michael Ostrog. In the original Scotland Yard Version dated February 23rd 1894,

Macnaghten describes Ostrog as follows: "*Michael Ostrog, a Russian doctor, and a convict, who was subsequently detained in a lunatic asylum as a homicidal maniac. This man's antecedents were of the worst possible type, and his whereabouts at the time of the murders could never be ascertained.*"

In the handwritten part of The Aberconway Version Ostrog is described as: "*Michael Ostrog. A mad Russian doctor & a convict & unquestionably a homicidal maniac. This man was said to have been habitually cruel to women, & for a long time was known to have carried out with him surgical knives & other instruments; his antecedents were of the very worst & his whereabouts at the time of the Whitechapel murders could never be satisfactory accounted for. He is still alive*." Note the absence of any mention of a lunatic asylum.

The relevant part here is in the last line of the Aberconway handwritten notes, which reads, "*He is still alive"*. As can be seen above in the original version Macnaghten stated Ostrog had been subsequently detained in a lunatic asylum. However, further research showed that at the time of the Whitechapel murders Ostrog was in prison in France. Additional research shows that in June 1894 four months after the original version in which Macnaghten states Ostrog was detained in a lunatic asylum, Ostrog was in fact arrested in Slough for an offence of theft and remanded in custody. There is evidence to show that between September 1887 and March 1888 Ostrog was detained in a lunatic asylum.

This all goes to confirm my belief that the original Scotland Yard version is unreliable as is The Aberconway Version. The handwritten notes from The Aberconway Version states that at the time these notes were written Ostrog was still alive. In my opinion they could not have been written from Macnaghten's original notes, (Scotland Yard Version) because if Macnaghten in his notes, which Lady Aberconway copied from, wrote Ostrog was still alive then, he must have known where he was, had he known where he was then he would have known that he was in prison in France and could not have been a suspect for Jack the Ripper. There is no mention of the lunatic asylum in the handwritten notes. So from what document did Lady Aberconway obtain this information?

Another minor discrepancy relates to the murder of Martha Tabram who was subjected to a frenzied attack where she was stabbed thirty-nine times. On page six of the typewritten sheets when discussing her murder that part is described as, "*her body had received several stabs,"* thirty-nine stab wounds could hardly be described as "several".

On a final note it should be noted that neither The Aberconway Version nor the original one contains any mention at all of the organs having been removed from any of the victims.

As has been stated the original Macnaghten Memorandum has been proved to be unreliable. What The Aberconway Version does is to, in my opinion, eliminate the suspect referred to as Kosminski from the investigation. Whatever information or report from which Macnaghten used as a source to include Kosminski in his list in the first instance may have been submitted in good faith but was obviously unreliable, or proven to be wrong, or could have simply been another malicious letter sent to the police at the time.

CHAPTER SIX

THE SWANSON MARGINALIA

Sir Robert Anderson, Assistant Commissioner of the Metropolitan Police placed Chief Inspector Donald Swanson in overall charge of the investigation into the Whitechapel murders from 15th September to 8th December 1888.

Swanson was freed from all other duties and given his own office at Scotland Yard from which to co-ordinate inquiries. He was given permission to see, "*every paper, every document, every report and every telegram"* concerning the investigation. In this way Swanson gained a wealth of knowledge and information about the killings. Following a long and distinguished police career, which saw him rise to the rank of Superintendent he retired in 1903 and he died in 1924 aged 76.

Swanson was also a close friend of Sir Robert Anderson and in Anderson's book, "*The Lighter Side of My Official Life"*, published in 1910 Anderson refers to the identity of the Ripper as being a Polish Jew. In his book he writes, "*I will merely add that the only person who had ever had a good view of the murderer unhesitatingly identified the suspect the instant he was confronted with him; but he refused to give evidence against him."*

As I have previously stated, in the book Anderson makes no mention of the name of the suspect, the name of the witness, nor does he give any information regarding the identification he refers to and when it took place. It should also be noted that there was no known witness who fits the witness criteria as described by Anderson, so this in itself is questionable especially as up until Anderson published his book in 1910 he is on record on many occasions as stating the police did not know the identity of the killer. Examples of this will be shown in a later chapter.

Swanson is purported to have written pencilled notes, or annotations in Anderson's book, which were later found by his grandson James Swanson in 1981 following him inheriting Anderson's book and other papers. In these pencilled annotations Donald Swanson purportedly makes reference to an alleged seaside home identification procedure stating a suspect was

taken by the police and subsequently identified by a witness. In the annotations Swanson names that suspect as Kosminski. These annotations go some way to corroborate the brief reference made by Anderson in his book.

But again there is no mention of the name of the witness, or the exact location where this identification procedure took place. Or when it took place, although one section of the annotations would suggest that if this identification procedure did ever take place then it could not have taken place before February 13th 1891 the date of the murder of Frances Coles whose murder was looked upon as being the work of Jack the Ripper and the last in the series.

The marginalia notes were written using two different two pencils – one grey and a second, purple-tinged pencil – and appeared to have been written at different times. The relevant annotations appear on page 138 of the book, followed by additional annotations written on the endpaper of the book.

On page 138 Anderson writes, "*I will merely add that the only person who had ever had a good view of the murderer unhesitatingly identified the suspect the instant he was confronted with him; but he refused to give evidence against him*".

The handwritten annotations underneath had been written using a purple-tinged pencil and read, "*Because the suspect was also a Jew and also because his evidence would convict the suspect, and witness would be the means of the murderer being hanged which he did not wish to be left on his mind. D. S. S.*" The letters D. S. S. are the initials of Swanson.

Another relevant pencil annotation which in the book appears to have been written at a later date or dates, and had been written using a different, grey pencil and follows Anderson's text, "*identified the suspect the instant he was confronted with him*". This annotation contained the words "*also a Jew*", further down the page and added in the left-hand margin is annotated in pencil, "*after this identification which suspect knew, no other murder of this kind took place in London*".

This last section of the written annotations raises a number of questions. Swanson is clearly stating that after the positive identification and the subsequent incarceration of the suspect who was identified, there were no

further murders. How accurate is this statement? Swanson only had sole control over the case until December 1888. However, he was actively involved in the investigation into the later murders of McKenzie and Coles in 1889 and 1891 respectively and as stated above still believed these murders could have been the work of the Ripper. As far as the suspect Aaron Kosminski is concerned he was finally incarcerated in an asylum six days before Frances Coles' murder so that's another factor, which in my opinion must rule him out of suspicion.

As I previously stated when discussing the suspect Aaron Kosminski, there are contradictions between Swanson and Anderson. Swanson wrote that the suspect was identified and then incarcerated, whilst Anderson wrote that the suspect was incarcerated and then identified.

Furthermore, on February 10th 1895 following a non-fatal knife attack and wounding of another prostitute, Alice Graham, in Whitechapel the police arrested a William Grant Grainger. The police and the press believed that Grainger could have been the Ripper. Up until then the case would appear to have still been open. There had been no official announcement to the contrary.

Grainger was later convicted of wounding and sentenced to ten years imprisonment. No evidence was ever found to connect him with being Jack the Ripper. This clearly shows that the police were still trying to find Jack the Ripper and had no clues as to his identity even as late as 1895. Swanson was however not directly involved in this investigation as he was suffering from flu with a flu epidemic which was sweeping London at that time.

That same year out of the blue a story appeared in the Pall Mall Gazette dated 7th May 1895, which reported that Grainger had been identified by the one person whom the police believe, saw the murderer with a woman a few moments before her mutilated body was found. If the witness was Joseph Lawende, he told the police in his original statement that he had only noticed the man's height, and did not think he would recognize him again. It is therefore curious as to why he was expected to identify him several years later. If it were Israel Schwartz then he only got a partial sighting of a man with Stride, and her body was not mutilated. Could this in fact be the identification procedure later referred to by Anderson and

Swanson? There is no information to tell us where or when this identification procedure took place.

There are concerns over this as there are over the identification procedure Swanson and Anderson refer to. One being the fact that the Grainger offence came under the jurisdiction of the Metropolitan Police and Lawende was a witness in the murder of Eddowes, which came under the jurisdiction of the City Police. Would the Metropolitan Police use a City witness? In practice yes they would, but it appears that if the seaside home identification parade did ever take place then why didn't the Metropolitan Police also use Lawende the City Police witness?

At the time the Pall Mall Gazette report was published Swanson who led the original Ripper investigation was interviewed by a reporter from that paper. He poured cold water on the suggestion that Grainger could be the Ripper and stated, "*The Whitechapel murders were the work of a man who is now dead"*. So this in itself again must eliminate Aaron Kosminski as he was institutionalized at that time and he didn't die until 1919. If Swanson was correct then why did the police subject Grainger to an identification procedure in an attempt to connect him to at least one Ripper murder?

Having digressed away from commenting on the marginalia I will now return to that specific topic. Looking at the annotations on the endpaper referred to above they read, "*Continuing from page 138. After the suspect had been identified at the seaside home where he had been sent by us with difficulty in order to subject him to identification, and he knew he was identified. On suspects return to his brothers house in Whitechapel he was watched by police (City CID) by day & night. In a very short time the suspect with his hands tied behind his back, he was sent to Stepney Workhouse and then to Colney Hatch and died shortly afterwards – Kosminski was the suspect" – D. S. S.*

Having Anderson's book and other items of Donald Swanson's come into his possession, James Swanson approached The Sunday Express and The News of The World newspapers in 1981 with the story surrounding the book and its annotations. The News of The World took up the offer and they agreed to pay him £750.00 for the rights to publish Donald Swanson's story, which included the relevant annotations. James Swanson requested a further £250.00 should a second article ever be published to which they agreed.

However, for whatever reason The News of The World did not publish the article. The mystery of Jack the Ripper has been of public interest for over 125 years and I would have thought this new disclosure would have been worthy of publication. The main reason to not publish may have been due to the fact that the name Kosminski had already been in the public domain since the early 1960s when the Macnaghten original memorandum was discovered and made public.

James Swanson waited until 1987 and then The News of The World agreed to rescind the original contract enabling him to then offer the rights to the same book and its annotations to the Telegraph who took up his offer and did publish an article.

In 1987, following the publication of the marginalia and the revelations contained in it, it was later noticed that on page 138 of the book, which contained the main annotations there was a red line going down the left-hand side of the page. This was later confirmed to have been added by James Swanson in an attempt to highlight the marginalia. This showed that James Swanson on at least one occasion had tampered with the book.

Having regards to a previous major disclosure which rocked the world of Ripperology, namely the "*Diary of Jack the Ripper*" and the controversy that there was over that, which still has today divided Ripper researchers, and as this new revelation has surfaced in similar fashion, it is quite clear to see why some researchers at the time remained sceptical and some, including myself, have continued to question the authenticity of the annotations.

As a result of sceptical comments made by several Ripper researchers, which were also published in the Telegraph article, James Swanson wrote a letter to the newspaper; however this was never published. There is one part of this letter, which is crucial when trying to judge the authenticity of the marginalia. This part reads, "*My Grandfather was a highly intelligent man. He was in complete command of all his faculties at the time of his death in 1924 at the age of 76. My Grandfather's notes were made in 1910 when he was 62.*"

In staying with the annotations, I like many others have only seen copies. I am no handwriting expert but even to the untrained eye there are many

dissimilarities in the notes. It should also be noted that as previously mentioned the part which contains the name Kosminski comes right at the end in the last sentence and is written on the endpage in the book and appears to be out of context with the rest of the annotations.

Since the discovery of the marginalia two separate handwriting tests have been carried out on the marginalia by two different handwriting experts, neither has been published in their entirety.

The first examination was carried out in 1988 by Dr. Richard Totty of the Forensic Science Service, who was sent only copies of the marginalia and copies of Swanson's handwriting to examine by author Paul Begg. So in any event Dr. Totty would not have been able to give a definitive opinion, as he would need the originals for comparison purposes. Dr. Totty did however give a written opinion based on what he had been asked to examine. The results or a copy of his report in full has never been made public. I have to ask why? Especially as some researchers who suggest the marginalia is totally genuine regularly quote both Dr. Totty's 1988 examination and a later examination carried out by Dr. Davies from the Forensic Science Service, as conclusive proof. This would turn out to be clearly not the case.

The second examination was carried out in 2006 by Dr. Davies from The Forensic Science Service who was asked by the Metropolitan Police to examine it after Anderson's book containing the annotations was donated by Nevill Swanson the current owner to the Crime Museum at New Scotland Yard. It would appear that for comparison, samples of Swanson's known writing in a ledger used by him was also submitted.

In his 2006 report later published in 2012 in full, Dr. Davies states that there was clear evidence that the writing in the ledger was dated from around the 1870s or the early 1880s. In my opinion hardly suitable to compare with handwriting purported to have been written in 1910 some 30 years later. Set out below is an extract from that report.

Dr. Davies states:

"I *have noted that these two sets of interest, although both written in pencil, appear to have been written with different pencils. I have further noted that the underline of the words "also a Jew" in the set one entry*

appears to be in a similar pencil to that used for the set two entries. These observations cause me to conclude that these two sets of entries were written at different times and that the set one entry was written first.

"The writing of these annotations is of reasonable quality although the writing of the set one entry is of slightly better line quality than is the writing of the set two entries. In particular the set two entries showed evidence of occasional tremor, which is similar to that sometimes found in the writing of individuals with certain neurological conditions, such as Parkinsonism. This may mean that the set two entries were written some time after the set one entry and I am unable to determine any more precisely what the time interval between these entries may have been."

The report concludes:

"I have not found any differences between the known and questioned writings in features that I consider are clearly fundamental structural features of the writing. However, in certain circumstances my findings might occur if Swanson were not the writer of the questions writing. Consequently, my findings do not show unequivocally that Swanson is the writer of the questioned writing but they do support this proposition.

"I have therefore concluded that there is strong evidence to support the proposition that Swanson wrote the questioned annotations in the book "The lighter side of my official life".

"If I were able to examine known writings by Swanson that were more nearly contemporary with the questioned writing then I might wish to alter that this conclusion. Such writings would enable me to determine whether or not differences that have attributed to the passage of time between the production of the known and questioned writings are truly caused by this."

A press release by the Forensic Science Service dated 11th January 2007 quoted Dr. Davies on his findings: "*What was interesting about analysing the book was that it had been annotated twice in two different pencils at different times, which does raise the question of how reliable the second set of notes were as they were made some years later. There are enough similarities between the writing in the book and that found in the ledger to suggest that it probably was Swanson's writing, although in the second, later set, there are small differences. These could be attributed to the ageing*

process and either a mental or physical deterioration, but we cannot be completely certain that is the explanation. The added complication is that people in the Victorian era tended to have very similar writing anyway as they were all taught the same copybook, so the kind of small differences I observed may just have been the small differences between different authors. It is most likely to be Swanson, but I'm sure the report will be cause for lively debate amongst those interested in the case."

Having read that report I did not believe Dr. Davies's report to be conclusive proof that Donald Swanson wrote all of the annotations. However, another forensic test which could and should have been carried out on the marginalia was never done. This test would have been to examine the graphite pencil writings using a carbon dating test. The writing relative to the marginalia has been made with two different colour pencils. A forensic test would likely prove whether the lead from the two different pencils was from the Victorian era or modern-day.

There are a number of other relevant question marks hanging over this marginalia, which suggest the annotations do not stand up to close scrutiny despite the handwriting tests. These questions have caused many heated debates among Ripper researchers causing some to suggest some or all of the marginalia may not be authentic.

What can be determined from these facts is that at the very least, the endpaper part relating to Kosminski would appear to have been written at a completely separate time than the rest of the marginalia in the book, which begs the question, why? Why precisely would Swanson, if he was in fact the author of the marginalia, have felt compelled to go back and add it at some later date, and why would Swanson initial his own writing? Anderson's book wasn't published until 1910 some twenty-two years after the Ripper crimes ceased.

As has previously been stated Anderson was the most senior officer involved in the Ripper investigation at the time yet he does not mention Kosminski by name, he simply refers to a Polish Jew. Did he really know or was he simply using what Macnaghten had written in 1894? It should be noted that Macnaghten by reasons of rank would have been in overall charge of Swanson in 1894.

Anderson would surely have been aware of the Macnaghten memorandum in 1894, some sixteen years before his own book was published. I must again reiterate what Major Henry Smith the head of the City of London Police in 1888, said in his memoirs; he categorically stated that the police at the time had no idea as to the identity of the Ripper. I believe this to be a totally honest statement. In addition one of Anderson's own officers Detective Inspector Reid who was actively engaged in the murders was quoted in The Morning Advertiser April 23rd 1910. Following the publication of Anderson's book: "*Now we have Sir Robert Anderson saying that Jack the Ripper was a Jew, that I challenge him to prove, and what is more it was never suggested at the time of the murders. I challenge anyone to prove that there was a tittle of evidence against man, woman or child in connection with the murders, as no man was ever seen in the company of the women who were found dead."*

If Swanson did write all of the marginalia then according to James Swanson he wrote it in 1910 when he was 62 years of age and in good health with no writing impairments, and some twelve years before his death.

As the marginalia is an interesting document now, and because in my opinion it has never been conclusively proved authentic I felt that in the interest of historical accuracy every attempt should be made to authenticate it or otherwise. If it is all genuine or only in part, it may go some way to totally prove or disprove what is contained in the Macnaghten memorandum. Although that was written in 1894 and the annotations in Anderson's book could not have been written before 1910 when the book was first published.

Out of the blue I received a phone call from Nevill Swanson. Word had filtered through to him that I wanted to talk to him regarding the marginalia. In orderly fashion we discussed the marginalia and I voiced my concerns to him to which he listened carefully.

As far as Dr. Davies' report was concerned he was happy that it was conclusive enough to suggest Donald Swanson had written all of the annotations in the book. I told him that I did not agree and there was another forensic test, which may prove or disprove its authenticity, along with more advanced handwriting examination techniques. Despite all of this

he firmly stated he was not prepared to have the marginalia subjected to any further tests or a new handwriting examination. I also asked if I could have his permission to physically examine the book and the annotations, a request he also refused.

All in all since 1987 there have been many ongoing discussions and heated debates amongst Ripper researchers and authors over this marginalia. If it is genuine how important is it to the world of Ripperology? I would suggest the importance isn't that great. At best it goes in some way to corroborate what Macnaghten wrote in the 1894 memorandum and of course that is now highly contentious. For those researchers who view Sir Robert Anderson as a shining light they will suggest it adds more weight to his memoirs whereby he stated the, "*The Ripper was a Polish Jew who was incarcerated in a lunatic asylum"*.

As with many aspects of the Ripper case there are many twists and turns to the case even in this day and age. I sat long and hard thinking about the marginalia. I decided to take matters into my own hand and in an attempt to prove or disprove its authenticity I sent a copy of the marginalia together with a new three-page document written by Donald Swanson, which I had uncovered and was dated 1893, to a handwriting expert Dianne Simpson. It didn't take her long to come back to me stating that in her opinion there were significant differences between the handwriting of the marginalia and the control sample of Swanson's handwriting I had provided, suggesting they had not all been written by the same hand. Dianne stated that if she were given permission to examine the original she would be then able to provide a statement to this effect and to positively outline the differences.

I at once wrote to Nevill Swanson making him aware of my findings with a request for him to either allow Dianne Simpson access to the original or for himself and the authors originally connected to this, to at their own expense commission a new examination by an independent handwriting expert. Sadly my offers and suggestions were refused. I then offered to pay for an independent analysis and the additional forensic tests out of my own pocket, again my offer was declined. I also ascertained that Nevill Swanson was now in possession of additional examples of Donald Swanson's handwriting from a time period in later years. This I felt was important as Dr. Davies had indicated he might be able to give a definitive answer

should he have more recent examples of Donald Swanson's handwriting to compare. Again Nevill Swanson declined to co-operate.

Nevill Swanson's reasons for refusal were twofold. Firstly he stated that he was still standing by the results of the previous handwriting tests as being conclusive proof that Donald Swanson had written all of the annotations. Secondly he stated that the book was old and in poor condition and he didn't want it handled unnecessarily.

In the summer of 2012 two new matters arose regarding the marginalia. The first being the fact that Nevill Swanson made public that he was intending to sell all Donald Swanson's letters and papers including Anderson's book containing the marginalia. I did make him what I believe to have been a fair price for this book, however it was declined. He stated it was his intention to put the collection into an auction at the end of October. My sole aim for acquiring the book was to have it re-examined. It then became public knowledge that Patricia Cornwell had expressed an interest in buying the book complete with annotations and donating it to The Metropolitan Police Crime Museum. However, at the time of writing all Donald Swanson's books and letters still remain unsold and are in the possession of Nevill Swanson who now has a dedicated website on which he is inviting prospective buyers of any of Donald Swanson's items to contact him direct.

The second issue was that Nevill Swanson had apparently agreed to co-operate in a written article about Donald Swanson and the history of the marginalia, which was being jointly written by Ripper researcher Keith Skinner and Adam Neil Wood the editor of an online Ripper publication titled, "*Ripperologist*". Nevill had allowed Adam access to all of Donald Swanson's papers and also gave him full access to Dr. Davies' first unpublished full report.

I spoke to Adam who knew of my concerns surrounding the authenticity of the marginalia and he assured me that when published the article would conclusively prove that the marginalia was genuine and he told me, I quote, "*You will then be the only person on the planet that does not believe it is totally genuine*". I also asked if Dr. Totty's report in full would be also published and he stated that only "*extracts*" which had been provided to

him by Paul Begg were to be published. Adam kept very quiet about the article and its contents and I was later to find out why.

I waited in great anticipation for the publication of the article, which came out on October 10th 2012 and what surprises there were. The main surprise was a re-examination of the marginalia by Dr. Davies. He had been approached by Adam Wood and asked to conduct a second examination on the marginalia. This was a surprise especially as Nevill Swanson and a number of other researchers had gone on record over the years suggesting that the two original handwriting expert's reports conclusively proved the marginalia to be authentic.

To facilitate a re-examination Dr. Davies was provided with other newer samples of Swanson's writing, namely Swanson's address book, and letters written by Donald Swanson to family members dated 1909, 1918, and 1923 all signed by Donald Swanson. Dr. Davies was also provided with a photograph of a carbon copy of a letter written by James Swanson and dated 27th September 1987. This was also to be used for comparison purposes in an attempt to negate the suggestion that James Swanson had in some way been involved in the writing of some or all of the marginalia.

From my past involvement with handwriting experts over the years, I am aware that for examination and comparison purposes they prefer free-flowing continuous samples of handwriting, as you would find in letters. The address book submitted in my opinion would not be a good control sample to use simply because the entries would have been made over a number of years, the entries would have been short and there would be differences in the handwriting. Dr. Davies even confirms that the entries in the address book were made over a lengthy time period but he has himself attempted to identify those which were relevant to the time period, which he has sought to use.

The photograph of a carbon copy of James Swanson's handwriting from 1987 would have created a major problem for Dr. Davies due to it being a photograph of a carbon copy of a letter and as previously stated originals are preferred before a definitive expert opinion could be given and ever relied upon. So any opinion given by Dr. Davies in respect of that document is questionable.

On 24th September 2012 Dr. Davies completed his report on his examinations. He upgraded his 2006 conclusion, stating, "*There is very strong support for the view that the notes towards the bottom of page 138 in Donald Swanson's copy of The Lighter Side of My Official Life and the notes on the last leaf in this book were written by Donald Swanson.*"

Commenting on the crucial writing and the suggestion made by some researchers that the line, "*Kosminski was the suspect*" had been added by someone in later years, Dr. Davies wrote, "*I have concluded that there is no evidence to support the view that the final line on the last leaf of the book was added much later to a pre-existing text. I have also found no evidence to support the view that this line was written by Jim Swanson.*"

In relation to the last part I refer back again to the control sample used for this purpose and have to question as how Dr. Davies can make such a sweeping statement based on what he had to use for comparison purposes.

In relation to Dr. Davies report I find it strange he does not refer to the comparison samples individually but simply in concluding refers to them collectively. In addition I also have to ask why Dr. Davies did not make any direct comparisons with the new control samples of letters submitted. After all, these were dated 1909, 1918, and 1923. To my mind this would have been valuable in determining the change, if any, of Swanson's handwriting over the years before comparing each one of them individually with the marginalia.

To many researchers this new report will now erase any doubts they have about its authenticity. However, in my opinion I personally feel that the results are still inconclusive. If you compare the findings of Dr. Davies there is one paragraph which is almost identical in both reports, part of that paragraph reads, "*There is very strong support for the view…*" my interpretation of that suggests to me that it cannot be conclusively proved beyond a reasonable doubt taking into account the reasons put forward for the changes in some of the handwriting.

To support the view that the marginalia is genuine and to explain the differences in the handwriting referred to by Dr. Davies in his first report, he along with the writers of the article make reference to several letters written by Donald Swanson in later years. One cited is dated August 1923

and is to Swanson's grandson Donald in which he apologizes for the shaky writing, which he states, "*his hand shakes paralytically*". Now in 1923 he would have been 75 and he died the following year in 1924. There is no suggestion that in 1910 when according to James Swanson, Donald wrote the marginalia he suffered from any writing impairment caused by any affliction or illness.

In his latest report Dr. Davies clearly makes significant mention of this 1923 letter and would appear to seek to rely on Swanson's affliction at that time as a probable explanation for the differences in some of the handwriting, which he has referred to in both reports. However. in 1910 when according James Swanson, Donald wrote the annotations he was not suffering from any affliction or illness, which would have affected his handwriting.

In his finding Dr. Davies reports:

"I found nothing that I would consider to be direct evidence of copying in the questioned writing. In order for the questioned writing to have been produced by copying the following circumstances would be required:

1) The copier would need access to considerable amounts of Donald Swanson's writing from the relevant time.

2) The copier would need to have access to the book.

3) The copier would have to have been someone with a very high skill at copying; such people are rare."

As has been documented it has been suggested by some that James Swanson could have had some involvement in the writing of the marginalia, that is why Dr. Davies was asked to try to negate that suggestion. In referring to Points 1-2 above James Swanson for one would certainly fit those criteria. The written annotations are very short and would not take very long for someone with practice to master the technique and of course anyone committing forgery would automatically try to conceal their own handwriting.

The last and important part to the marginalia states "Kosminski was the suspect" it should be noted that in 1981 when James Swanson agreed to sell the story to The News of The World, the story was to be written by reporter

Charles Sandell. His typewritten article has been found and published and in that he makes no mention of that last line in the marginalia “Kosminski was the suspect.” I find that strange as that last line is the most important part of the marginalia because it names the suspect, and I would have expected it to have been included in his article.

Now I have to ask why it was not. Was it an omission on Sandell's part, or was it a case that the last line was not there in the marginalia at that time? If that was the case that might explain why The News of The World article never got published, because the name Kosminski was already in the public domain. In the 1987 article published by The Telegraph, the line “Kosminski was the suspect was mentioned as being part of the marginalia.

In another document, which Sandell sent to his news editor prior to him formulating his intended article, he does include a line which reads, "The Yard Detective names the man as Kosminksi, a Police Jew” In the absence in his final article of the all-important "Kosminski was the suspect," Sandell can only have been told that Donald Swanson said, "he was a Polish Jewish immigrant called Kosminski," for there is nothing else in Charles Sandell's transcription of the marginalia to substantiate such a claim.

Many years previous I along with many others first challenged the authenticity of the marginalia, both in part and in total. I questioned the reliability of the two forensic reports, which were in existence but had not both been published in their entirety. I now feel I was totally right to challenge these as many researchers had accepted their reliability as conclusive proof. As I have said previous that was clearly not the case, had that been the case then there would have been no need to request Dr. Davies to re-examine the marginalia. In my opinion the results of his first examination were inconclusive and did not prove beyond a reasonable doubt that Donald Swanson wrote all of the marginalia. Having closely scrutinized the results of his second examination I am still of the same opinion. In his 2006 report he concludes:

“I have therefore concluded that there is strong evidence to support the proposition that Swanson wrote the questioned annotations in the book “The lighter side of my life”.”

In his 2012 report he concludes:

"There is very strong support for the view that the notes towards the bottom of page 138 in Donald Swanson's copy of The Lighter Side of My Official Life and the notes on the last leaf in this book were written by Donald Swanson."

Note the words "*strong support"* that in my opinion is a long way from being able to say positively and unequivocally.

If the marginalia is not totally authentic and all of the annotations were not written by Swanson but another, and that another sought fit to invent this seaside home identification and add Kosminski's name to the story, that might be best described as the stroke of a genius.

For someone to invent such a story knowing that it could not be proved or disproved simply because it never took place in the first instance, and when doubts were cast surrounding this scenario and other researchers were looking for corroboration to the story, what better explanation to put forward by those who believe it to be authentic than to fall back on the lost, missing, stolen or destroyed files explanation. A perfect scenario if that were in fact the case.

I have no hidden agenda, as some would suggest with regards to the marginalia. From my perspective this is just another part of this 125-year-old mystery, which I needed to re-examine as part of my overall ongoing long and protracted reinvestigation. My objective as an investigator is to seek the truth and feel I was justified in raising the valid arguments having regard to the inconclusive results obtained by Dr. Davies, and my handwriting expert who questions the handwriting of the marginalia. In addition, one has to consider the questions marks that hang over the make-up and content of what is contained within it.

As I have previously stated, much of which went against all known and accepted police methods of the time. It is also fact that there has never been any corroboration to what is written in the marginalia regarding the identification and the events that followed thereafter save for that loosely described by Anderson.

I should also mention again at this point that the name Kosminski first appeared in the Macnaghten memorandum written in 1894, Macnaghten was senior in rank to Swanson, and had such an important breakthrough in

this case had have happened in 1891, as has been described in the marginalia, I would have expected Macnaghten to have been aware of it and to have documented it in his memorandum. This fact alone coupled with Macnaghten then in The Aberconway Version exonerating the Kosminski referred to, in my mind, casts a major doubt about the marginalia.

Knowing the concerns I had and the contradictory evidence I held, I was disappointed that Adam Wood and Keith Skinner did not ask me to be a part of the re-examination by Dr. Davies, had they done so perhaps a number of issues and concerns that there still are could have been discussed and perhaps alleviated at that stage, instead of now being left up in the air.

Having regards to the concerns I had with Dr. Davies' current report I made several attempts to arrange an interview with him so that I might discuss my concerns with him and invite him to answers many important questions on issues which it would appear have not been fully addressed. To date he has failed to acknowledge or reply to any of my correspondence.

I will still continue to campaign for a new more in-depth independent handwriting examination to be conducted and also the additional forensic graphite-dating test. Sadly I now feel that neither will be achievable due to where the book containing the marginalia may end up, although if Patricia Cornwell does acquire the book then perhaps with all her financial resources and contacts within the world of forensics she may see fit to have those tests carried out, so this mystery within a mystery can be finally solved.

CHAPTER SEVEN

CARL FEIGENBAUM - AKA CARL ZAHN/ANTON ZAHN

So in my opinion, having eliminated many of the likely and prime suspects I asked myself many times who the killer could have been. Was he a tinker, tailor, soldier, sailor, rich man, poor man, beggarman or thief? It is probably true to say that, over the years, representatives of all of these walks of life and many occupations besides have been suspected. I've always believed that, should the truth ever come out, the killer would be revealed as someone who did not fall under suspicion at the time and has not been mentioned by any researcher to date. After investigating the aforementioned suspects and satisfying myself that none of them was Jack the Ripper, this conviction was even stronger.

For a long time I looked at the possibility that the killer could have been a merchant seaman. I could find nothing to suggest that the police had pursued this specific line of enquiry at the time with any diligence. This was strange and suggested to me that they were perhaps very blinkered in their approach to solving the murders. They should have seen, after the double murders on 30th September that a pattern was beginning to form. In short, since the St Katherine's Dock and the London Dock were so close to the murder locations, they should have looked at the possibility that the killer could be a merchant seaman. Ships use docks, prostitutes are attracted to docks, and merchant seamen seek out the prostitutes when their boats dock.

It is also a known fact that Whitechapel had more than its fare share of prostitutes. Between 30th September and 8th November police had ample opportunity to explore this line of enquiry in greater detail, had they done so, after Mary Kelly's murder they would have been in a position to take positive action with regards to this particular line of enquiry.

In view of my suspicions I decided to broaden my lines of enquiry to try to ascertain if there was any other Ripper-like murders in other parts of the world. I came across unconfirmed newspaper reports of a string of murders of prostitutes in Managua, the capital of Nicaragua. These murders

supposedly took place within a ten-day period in January 1889. All the victims were reported having been killed and mutilated in similar fashion to the Whitechapel victims. All of the crimes were unsolved.

In addition, I discovered the murder of a female, which occurred in October 1889 in the German seaport town of Flensburg. The reports stated that the victim was killed and mutilated in Ripper-like fashion, with no one being apprehended. The merchant seaman theory was now becoming a reality, with the dates of the murders all fitting into a pattern suggesting the same killer could have been responsible for all the murders, and that killer could have in fact been a merchant seaman.

I then refocused on the Whitechapel killings. My first line of enquiry was to try to establish the details of any boats docked in London Docks and St Katharine's Dock on the dates of the murders, to see if any of them were berthed on all the murder dates between August and November 1888. These two docks were the nearest to Whitechapel.

After combing through thousands of maritime records I discovered that a German merchant vessel belonging to the Norddeutsche Line and registered in Bremen, named the Reiher was berthed in St Katherine's Dock on all the murder dates save for September 30th. The reason it was not there on that date was the fact that it had been taken out of service for a time following a collision in the River Thames previously. However, another vessel the Sperber from the same line was there on that date. Furthermore, the Reiher was also there on the date of the Alice McKenzie murder on July 17th 1889. The records also show that two merchant vessels from the same line were also there on the date of the Frances Coles murder 13th February 1891. So now the investigation was moving towards the possibility that the killer could have been a German merchant seaman, but could I identify him?

On visiting the state archives in Bremen, Germany I discovered that all the crew lists for the Reiher and its voyages to London on all of the murder dates were all missing. Now I found this very strange when the archives contained hundreds of records of crew lists for almost every boat that sailed from Bremen, yet these few were missing. I had hoped that I would be able to identify a seaman, or seamen, who were on board that boat when it was docked in London on the dates of the murders. This turned out to be one of

a number of instances where important Ripper related documents were found to be missing from official archives.

I then uncovered other murders, which occurred in the USA and Germany, and all took place after the cessation of the Whitechapel murders. They all occurred between 1891 and 1894. All had a very similar MO and fitted into a significant time pattern, all remained unsolved save for one which would become very significant and subsequently lead to a major breakthrough regarding the possible identity of the killer known as Jack the Ripper.

I have set out below the full list of all the murders in chronological order. The reports are as they appeared in the various newspapers of the day. As can be seen none of the dates overlap. This suggests that the same killer may have been responsible for some or all of the murders I have documented. I am fully aware that in some of these murders persons were arrested and interviewed. However, no one was ever charged so the cases were never officially closed, so an open mind must be kept when discussing them, when looking at the full catalogue of the unsolved murders.

Unfortunately, due to the passage of time there were no official police records left on any of the murders. The USA police records were only kept for a period of 75 years and then destroyed. The same applies with regards to prison records.

The full list of dates and locations of unsolved Ripper-like murders is as follows. These include the following details of the first two shown on the list:

Apr	1863	Central London	**
Dec 24th	1872	Central London	**
Aug 7th	1888	Whitechapel London	
Aug 31st	1888	Whitechapel London	

Sep 8th	1888	Whitechapel London	
Sep 30th	1888	Whitechapel London	
Nov 8th	1888	Whitechapel London	**
Jul 17th	1889	Whitechapel London	
Oct	1889	Flensburg Germany	
Apr 11th	1890	Wisconsin USA	
Apr 28th	1890	Benthen Germany	
Feb 13th	1891	Whitechapel London	
Apr 24th	1891	Jersey City USA	**
Oct 25th	1891	Berlin Germany	
Jan 31st	1892	New Jersey USA	
Apr 3rd	1892	Berlin Germany	
Aug 31st	1894	New York USA	

** Denotes found murdered in a locked room

The last murder is the most interesting. This occurred on August 31st 1894 and the location was close to the scenes of the Carrie Brown murder on April 24th 1891 and the Elizabeth Senior murder on January 31st 1892. The most significant point in relation to this crime was that the perpetrator was apprehended moments after committing the murder whilst attempting to flee the scene of the crime. He was found with traces blood on his hands. The murder weapon, a long knife with a six inch highly sharpened blade was found nearby, and when examined by a doctor, had traces of what was

believed to have been the blood of the victim. When a later search of the suspect's room was conducted police found a cloth bag, which they suggested was the bag which the knife had been kept in. Also found in the room was a whetstone for sharpening the knife. The suspect had been residing with the victim and her son for only a few days as a lodger. Further enquiries showed that he had been travelling around the New York area as well as other parts of the USA.

The man arrested was later convicted and sentenced to death for this murder. After losing his appeal he was finally executed in the electric chair in Sing Sing Prison on April 27th 1896. The killer's name was Carl Feigenbaum. He was known to have used several aliases around the country, one of which was Carl Zahn. This is suggested may have been his real name. Other aliases he was believed to have are Anton Zahn, and Carl Strohband. On examining this particular case closely and the antecedents of Feigenbaum and from all the facts I had gathered through my long protracted enquiry into the Whitechapel murders, my suspicions led me to suspect that this man could have been involved in the Whitechapel murders and may in fact have been the elusive Jack the Ripper.

At the time of his arrest Feigenbaum gave his age as 54, which would mean he was born in Germany around 1840. There are entries in the German merchant seaman's register in the Bremen Archives for a Carl Feigenbaum born 1844. These show that up until 1878 he was employed as a merchant seaman for the Norddeutsche Line when they stopped keeping records. It should also be noted that in 1875 records show he deserted one ship in New York. Whether he then worked under another alias after 1878 or whether he went back to using his own name is not known.

Sadly the entries for this register did not continue after 1878. So we can prove that Feigenbaum had worked as a fireman on German merchant ships owned by the same merchant fleet that operated vessels between Bremen and London at the time of the Whitechapel murders.

Following his arrest in 1894 and subsequent execution in 1896 there were no more Ripper-like murders. From the aforementioned list setting out all the murders, it can be seen the first murder occurred in 1863. By reason of his approximate known birth date this would have put him at age 23 at the time of this murder.

The details of the New York murder of Juliana Hoffman in 1894 for which he was arrested are as follows, and are taken from a copy of the official court transcript given by the appeal court judge, which I purchased from the Court Archives:

"On the night of Friday, August 31, 1894, in a house on Sixth Street in the city of New York. The deceased, Juliana Hoffman a widow fifty-six years of age, was in the house with her son Michael, a boy sixteen years old, in two rooms on the first floor over a store of a building on Sixth Street, near Avenue A, in the city of New York. Carl Feigenbaum a German, who came to this country in 1891, a gardener by occupation, having no family here, and, prior to the homicide, had drifted about in the city of New York and vicinity, occasionally getting employment, but having no steady work, and was poor and often without means. He had lodgings from time to time at various places, sometimes paying in part therefore, and in other cases staying for a few days at a place and leaving without paying the sum agreed. On Wednesday, August 29, 1894, he applied to the deceased for a room, and arranged with her that he should occupy the back room of the two rooms of her apartment for a sleeping room, he to pay therefore one dollar a week, and Mrs. Hoffman was to furnish him breakfast, for which he was to pay her eight cents for each meal. He occupied the back room on Wednesday and Thursday nights, and on Friday evening, about ten o'clock, went to his room, which opened out of the front room, leaving the deceased and her son therein. During Friday evening, while the three were together in the front room, the deceased took from a closet in that room, which was left unlocked, a small pocket book and left the house to purchase some bread for her and her son's supper, and on her return placed the pocket book in the closet again. After the defendant had returned to his room the deceased and her son went to bed, the mother sleeping on a lounge on one side of the room near one of the two front windows, the son sleeping on a couch at the foot of, and at right angles to the lounge. The son was the only person who was an eyewitness to anything, which occurred between the defendant and the deceased prior to the homicide. He was awakened about midnight, or a little after, by a scream from his mother. He then saw the defendant standing by the side of the lounge, with a knife in his hand, facing the deceased, who had partly raised herself up on the lounge. The son kicked at him and got out of bed, and the defendant then turned towards him with the upraised knife. The son fled to the front window furthest from

the lounge, got out backward and stood upon the cornice of the building and cried "murder, police." He testifies that he put his head into the room and saw the defendant strike his mother with the knife in the neck. His cries alarmed the neighbourhood, and a policeman and other persons ran towards the house. The defendant was then seen coming out of an alley at the side of the house on Sixth Street, having on a shirt or undershirt and trousers, but having no hat or shoes on and soon commenced to run, but was pursued and overtaken by the officers and brought back to the house and into the room, the scene of the homicide. The deceased was found lying on the floor near the lounge, bleeding from an incised wound in the neck, apparently unconscious, and she died shortly after. A witness who lived in a house overlooking the alley, hearing the alarm given by the son, went to the window of her room looking upon the rear of the house occupied by the deceased, and saw the defendant on the roof of an outbuilding adjacent to the bedroom which the defendant had occupied, from which he clambered down into the alley before spoken of. On searching the alley a short time after the defendant's arrest a knife was found, with which, as was shown, the wound in the neck of the deceased might have been inflicted, with blood stains upon the blade. There was evidence also that there were bloodstains on the hands of the defendant when he was brought into the room after his arrest. In the room occupied by the defendant was found a whetstone, such as was used in sharpening tools, and a blue cloth cover, which was suitable for the covering of the knife found in the alleyway. Neither of these articles had belonged to the deceased or her son. The door of the closet in the front room was found open and the pocket book was lying open on the shelf. There was little or no money in it the evening before; after it was replaced by the deceased on her return from the baker's, but this was not known to the defendant. There was another large pocket book in a trunk in the room, which contained six dollars, which had not been disturbed. The sole defence was a denial of the identity of the defendant with the person who stabbed the deceased. The defendant was sworn as a witness in his own behalf and his story was that a man named Weibel with whom he had become acquainted, and who knew that he had a room in the house of the deceased, attracted his attention by a whistle after the defendant had gone to bed and he thereupon went down and let him into the house, and that both then got into the one bed, and that the witness was awakened by a scream from the deceased, and finding that Weibel had left the room, he got up, and

supposing that Weibel had attempted to escape by the alley, he went out on the roof and into the alley to find him, and in this way he accounts for his being in the alley and going into the street. The improbable story of the defendant, as to which there was no corroboration, as might be supposed, was not credited by the jury. It is unnecessary to go into further detail of the evidence. There can be no reasonable doubt that the defendant was guilty of the crime charged and except for the grave character of the case, we should have deemed it quite superfluous to call attention by an opinion to the facts, which justified the Conviction.

"The question of motive is comparatively unimportant where the other evidence points unmistakably to the guilt of a defendant. In the present case there could not under the circumstances be any evidence from a living witness (other than the defendant) of what had transpired between the defendant and the deceased before the son was awakened by the screams of his mother. Whether the defendant went into the room to steal the pocket book and was discovered by the deceased, and this led to the tragedy, is mere matter of conjecture. It is sufficient to say that the guilt of the defendant was satisfactorily proven. The case was ably tried before an experienced and able judge. The few exceptions taken raise no serious question and none have been relied upon by the counsel for the defendant. The charge was clear, careful and impartial, and it becomes our duty to affirm the conviction."

I realised that despite gathering all this circumstantial evidence I was a long way away from being able to positively say that Feigenbaum was involved in the Whitechapel murders or in fact was the elusive Jack the Ripper. But then what I now believe to be some of the final pieces of the jigsaw came together.

Having dug deeper into everything connected to this murder and Carl Feigenbaum, more significant facts emerged which singularly did not amount to too much at the time but later collectively made my suspicions about him being concerned in the Whitechapel murders even stronger.

Feigenbaum was represented at his trial by a young attorney by the name of William Sanford Lawton who was a partner in a law firm Foote and Lawton who had offices in the Home Life Building New York City. Following Feigenbaum's execution Lawton broke his code of

confidentiality to the press revealing details of conversations he had with Feigenbaum and his past crimes. What he revealed would be crucial as far as the final pieces of my investigation were concerned.

During the two years between Feigenbaum being arrested and being finally executed Lawton saw him on many occasions and built up a rapport with him and was the only person Feigenbaum trusted. This is not unusual in murder cases for a prisoner to confide in his lawyer. However, any conversations between them at that time would have been the subject of confidentiality and Lawton would not have been permitted to reveal them to the police or the public without the permission of Feigenbaum, and during this confidentially period of time if Feigenbaum had committed other murders and had confessed them to Lawton he certainly would not have wanted them made public or to even give the authorities any inclination he may have committed other murders. Although the later revelations made by Lawton suggested that if he had confessed to any other such crimes it might have saved him from the electric chair.

Feigenbaum was tried and despite entering a plea of not guilty was convicted. He had protested his innocence right up until he was found guilty in court. He was still protesting his innocence even after his appeal failed and right up until the time of his execution.

Following Feigenbaum's conviction and his appeal being rejected by the appeal court, Lawton submitted a clemency appeal on the grounds of Feigenbaum being insane. Had he admitted any more horrendous murders prior to this then it might have given more weight to this appeal. However, after he was medically examined by a state medical examiner he was deemed to be sane and the clemency appeal was rejected...

So what made Lawton break his client confidentiality? Before speaking, the lawyer explained that he revealed the secret because he felt it to be his duty to science and the law. So what did Lawton reveal? He stated, "*One night I stayed talking with him for over two hours and during this time, he told me, "I have for years suffered from a singular disease which induces an all absorbing passion, this passion manifests itself in a desire to kill and mutilate every woman who falls in my way. At such times I am unable to control myself"*" Lawton went on to say, "*I began to search Feigenbaum's record. I learned that he was in Wisconsin at the time the country was*

startled by the news of the murder and mutilation of several women there, when I saw him again I mentioned the Whitechapel murders to which he replied, "The lord was responsible for my acts, and that to him only could I confess." I was so startled that for the moment I did not know what to do I then looked up the dates of the Whitechapel murders and selected two. When I saw Feigenbaum again and was talking with him I said: "Carl, were you in London from this date to that one," naming those selected. "Yes", he answered, and relapsed into silence. I then communicated with London and discovered that Feigenbaum was also there when other women fell victim to the knife of some mysterious assassin." Lawton then stated, "*I later questioned him closely and found that he could converse with intelligence on surgery and dissection. When I asked if he knew anything about these subjects he would feign an ignorance that was unnatural. The man was a devil,"* concluded Mr. Lawton. *"His motive for crime was his frightful desire for mutilation. I will stake my professional reputation that if the police will trace this man's movements carefully for the last few years their investigations will lead them to London and to Whitechapel. He had been all over Europe and much of this country. He seemed on first acquaintance to be simple-minded, almost imbecile, yet the man was crafty beyond measure. He had means of his own, as was proved by a will he made before his death, yet he always professed extreme poverty."*

Assistant District Attorney Vernon M. Davis, who prosecuted Feigenbaum, said: "*If it were proved that Feigenbaum was 'Jack the Ripper' it would not greatly surprise me, because I always considered him a cunning fellow, surrounded by a great deal of mystery, and his life history was never found out. The case was an odd one, and the People had to furnish a motive for the murder. This was the money which was kept in Mrs. Hoffman's closet or trunk*."

I have to sympathise with Lawton with regards to the position he found himself in as far as the confidentially aspect is concerned. I myself now work as a defence advocate and on a daily basis attend police stations to advise persons in custody. Over the years I have represented murderers, rapists and robbers. I always make a point of asking the client if he is guilty of the offence for which he has been arrested for, and if they have committed any other similar offences which may come to light through the police enquiry whilst in custody.

There are times when I ask this question and a client will openly confide and tell all. However, there are other times when clients will just sit and smile. When this happens my years of experience tell me that they are hiding perhaps guilt and other offences. More persistent offenders play the system. They may have committed other offences but they also know that unless they make a full and frank admission to the police, there is every likelihood that there will not be any evidence to convict them. Of course in this day and age with modern technology, offences do come to light sometimes several years after the offence was committed. But way back in Victorian times they did not have the benefit of these sciences. So my interpretation of Feigenbaum's reaction and silence when questioned by Lawton is that he had very likely had committed other offences.

So what is known about Carl Feigenbaum? He himself stated that he came from Karlsruhe in Germany. However, during the trial a prosecution witness told the court that Feigenbaum had stated that he came from a town called Capitolheim. The court stenographer may have recorded this detail wrongly, as I can find no other reference to a town or city of that name in Germany.

Feigenbaum told the court that he arrived in the USA in 1890. This may be another lie, however, as there would be later evidence I discovered to suggest that he may have been travelling back and forth between Germany and the USA but did not take up residence until possibly 1891 or even later, as was mentioned during the trial. He had told another witness that he was married but gave no details of his wife or where she was or what happened to her. However, when spoken to by a police officer after his arrest, he stated that he was single.

Another prosecution witness testified that Feigenbaum had stated that he was married and had children. Feigenbaum told the court that he had two sisters and a brother who were in Germany. Later during his trial he stated that he had a brother called John, who was living in Brooklyn, New York. Feigenbaum gave no specific details as to how he himself had arrived in the USA or where he had been or what his early work was. I could not find his name or any name he is known to have used on any official immigration records I checked. I firmly believe that he did not arrive as an official immigrant.

Feigenbaum stated that shortly after arriving in the USA he had been to Orange County, but it is unclear which one he meant, because there is an Orange County in California and another is a district of greater New York. During the trial he was asked if he had been to the following towns in the USA: Port Austin in Michigan, Sioux Falls in South Dakota and South Falls in Oregon. Astoria was also mentioned, but is not known which of the three US towns of this name was being referred to, as one is in Illinois and another in Oregon. Or the one that is again, a suburb of greater New York. It never became clear what the relevance of these questions was, but there must have been evidence to suggest that he had been to these places, probably from papers and documents found by the police which were subsequently connected to him and which are discussed later.

The prosecution may have been aware of other murders or non-fatal attacks on women in those towns and were trying to link him to them. Even so, these questions raised in court appear to corroborate Lawton's statement that Feigenbaum had travelled the country. But because they were not directly connected to the trial they were never properly expanded upon. Nevertheless, they would turn out to be important to my investigation, because some of those towns mentioned in court are located in the Midwest, and in the Midwest town of Hurley, there was an undetected Ripper-like murder; this further corroborates Lawton's statement that he knew Feigenbaum to have been in those locations at the time of the murder and that, in his view, he could have been the person responsible.

Feigenbaum gave his occupation as a flower gardener and indicated that he had followed this trade in Germany. At his trial the prosecution were able to portray him as a loner, drifter during the months leading up to his arrest, producing evidence that he moved from lodging house to lodging house, staying for only a few days before moving on, sometimes owing money for rent. Coincidentally, women ran all of these lodging houses.

Police inquiries at one of the lodging houses where he had stayed revealed a small box, containing papers and letters, which, it was suggested, he had left behind. Some of the papers were letters and documents in the names of men who had resided at lodging houses where Feigenbaum had stayed. It is very likely that Feigenbaum had stolen these papers and, if so, I assume that was in order to appropriate the owner's identities. However, what would turn out to be significant in my investigation were letters

addressed to a man by the name of Anton Zahn. These would later add weight to my belief that Feigenbaum could have been involved in the Whitechapel murders and had been working as a German merchant seaman visiting London at the time of the Whitechapel murders.

At first, Feigenbaum denied both that the box was his and that his name was Anton Zahn but admitted he had been using this name to stay at the lodging houses mentioned in court. He stated that Anton Zahn was someone he had befriended. Anton Zahn, he said was a merchant seaman working as a fireman, on a Bremen registered vessel named either the Emms or the Eider, and Feigenbaum had been collecting his mail from the local post office in that name and had opened it. He stated that he did not know of this man's current whereabouts and that his reason for opening the letters was to reply to Zahn's sister in Germany.

Coincidentally, my enquiries revealed that the ships Feigenbaum mentioned were in fact two steamers operated by the Norddeutsche Line of Bremen. These two vessels operated a passenger service between Bremen, Southampton and New York and were from the same merchant line that operated the merchant vessels, which were sailing between Bremen and London at the time of the Whitechapel murders.

I knew I had to reopen the previous line of enquiry with regards to the merchant seaman theory. First, I needed to look into the two boats mentioned by Feigenbaum and their movements and whereabouts at the time of the murders. Then I had to see if any crew lists for any of these boats were still in existence. In doing so, I hoped to gain information that would positively link Feigenbaum to either the Reiher or other boats by showing a crewman in the name of Carl Feigenbaum, or Anton or Carl Zahn. If I could show that he had been a merchant seamen on the Reiher it would further corroborate the statement made by his lawyer William Lawton.

My first line of inquiry into the two ships proved very interesting. Feigenbaum has stated that Anton Zahn was a fireman on either the EIDER or the EMMS. By his own admissions, he was referring to a period of time shortly before his arrest. However, it is a fact that the EIDER ran aground off the Isle of Wight in January 1892, over two years before his arrest. So

Feigenbaum must have had some knowledge of, or direct contact with, the boat before January 1892.

In the crew lists for these two boats for the period 1888-94, I could find no other references to Anton Zahn, Carl Zahn or Carl Feigenbaum. So, if Feigenbaum had been a merchant seaman during these years, he was not shown under the names I had for him on the transatlantic routes from Bremen to New York between August and November 1888. Had he been shown there, he could be eliminated from any involvement in the Whitechapel murders or being the elusive Jack the Ripper.

So where was he? Well, as I have suggested previously he could have still been working as a merchant seaman, travelling back and forth between Bremen and London and other European ports. In any event, Lawton had stated that he himself had discovered that Feigenbaum was in London at the time of the murders, but we don't know what enquiry he carried out to confirm Feigenbaum's movements. Could Lawton have got hold of the crew lists back in 1894? Was this how he had linked Feigenbaum to Whitechapel at the time of the murders? Sadly we may never know due to the passage of time and the missing crew lists.

So the mystery remains. When Lawton made his statement to the press, why didn't the reporter asking the questions simply ask Lawton what those enquiries were? And what were the results? I find it hard to believe that, although he was interviewed by several newspapers about this matter, no one bothered to ask those two important questions.

Under cross-examination during his trial, Feigenbaum admitted that he did in fact have a sister in Germany called Magdalena Strohband. Strangely, the letters referred to previously and addressed to Anton Zahn were from a female called Magdalena. Feigenbaum finally admitted that the letters were from his sister to himself, leaving the court in no doubt that he and Anton Zahn was the same person.

At the time of the Julia Hoffman murder Feigenbaum was 54, that would have made him 48 at the time of the Whitechapel murders. The following details about Feigenbaum have been taken from the official admission record from Sing Sing Prison, which is the only remaining prison document

relating to him. He would have been asked to give these details on being initially processed at the prison:

Name Carl Feigenbaum

Born Germany

Age 54

Married - It is unclear as to whether the prison officer completing the form wrote it on the form expecting a yes or a no or whether Feigenbaum indicated he was married.

Occupation - Florist

Height - 5.4ins

Weight - 126lbs

Religion - Catholic

Complexion - medium

Read - Yes

Write - Yes

Smoke - Yes

Shoe size - 8

Hat size - 6-7

Hair - Dark Brown thin on top of head

Eyes - Grey, Small deep set

Forehead - High and heavily arched

Nose - Large, Red with pimples

Teeth - Poor nearly all gone on left side

Tattoos - Anchor in Indian ink on right hand at base of thumb

Habits - MAD!

The last entry is significant he describes himself as being mad. He either believed he was mad or was cunning enough to think ahead to the later issues of raising a defence of insanity. The only picture of him was a sketch made by an artist, which was made during his trial: Picture 1.

Whilst awaiting execution he apparently made a will that indicated he did have money in a German bank in New York, which he left to his sister in Germany, he gave her name as Magdalena Strohband but there appears to be nothing more known of her. Despite making extensive enquiries to date the will has never been traced.

I have been unable to find out further information on the will or his sister or the so-called property he owned. I would have expected the will to have been probated in the government office at Westchester New York, which was the nearest probate office to Sing Sing Prison. However, they have no records of this will. I came across a newspaper article from Cincinnati, Ohio, which gave details of Feigenbaum's execution and this stated that his will would be probated there however, there is no record of this will having been probated there either. The only other thought would be that he gave the will to William Lawton who had it probated elsewhere. However, there is no central registry in the USA and so trying to track it down was like trying to find a needle in a haystack.

The same applies to trying to trace his sister he gave her surname as Strohband. It is not known if this was her married name. If she were not

married then Carl Feigenbaum could in fact be Carl Strohband. Adding another name to his list of aliases and making it almost impossible to trace him back to Germany, as all of these surnames were fairly common German names.

I made extensive enquiries in an attempt to trace the original case papers of William Sanford Lawton. These would have been invaluable as they may have shown what enquiries he had carried out into the movements of Feigenbaum and what they had revealed, as well as perhaps giving me more of an insight into Feigenbaum who everyone describes as a man of mystery, whose life was also shrouded in mystery.

However, sadly this line of enquiry was also doomed to fail. In an ironic twist of fate I discovered that on February 13th 1897, William Lawton committed suicide by shooting himself in the head in Lincoln Park, Chicago. He had been in Chicago a week and was on his way to visit his mother in California. There was no known reason for his suicide and no suicide notes were left.

However, I wonder if following the breaking of his confidentiality in relation to Feigenbaum he incurred the wrath of the Bar Council or the New York Lawyers Council and was or had been the subject of disciplinary proceedings. If so then perhaps the fear of being disbarred had played on his mind to the extent he became mentally unstable.

I had previously stated in my profile of Jack the Ripper that I believed the killer to have been between 40 and 50 and may have been a loner. In later years Feigenbaum was definitely a loner. Lawton stated Feigenbaum had a desire to kill and mutilate women. Feigenbaum was also described as being cunning as is documented in the 1894 New York murder. When he was initially arrested shortly after the murder still in close proximity to the murder scene he quickly came up with a plausible story this shows the ability of a man to think quickly on his feet. By him jumping out of the window and on to a flat roof and then jumping to ground level, shows his agility even at 54. We know that Jack the Ripper also had these same attributes to avoid detection and make good his escape in and around Whitechapel.

The murder of Juliana Hoffman and her killer Carl Feigenbaum is of course the most important murder of the whole investigation. As has been documented it was suggested by the prosecution that the motive for her murder may have been theft. Now if one looks more closely at those circumstances that may not have been the case.

It was suggested that Feigenbaum knew where Mrs. Hoffman kept her money and so he attempted to steal it whilst she was asleep and that when she woke up and saw him he stabbed her and cut her throat with such ferocity that her head was almost severed. If theft were his intention then why would he be carrying the knife? That would have made it harder for him to search for the money holding a knife. If he had wanted to steal and knew where she kept her money why did he simply not wait for her to leave the house and then steal it? I suspect that he intended both, which is consistent with the Elizabeth Senior murder.

The statement made by Lawton to the press is also crucial to the Ripper investigation. When he made his statement he invited the police to investigate Feigenbaum and his movements in relation to the Whitechapel murders. Neither the New York Police nor the Metropolitan Police in London appeared to have pursued this line of enquiry, and I have to ask why not? Surely if they had spoken to Lawton he could himself have given them details of the enquiries he conducted, and this is where Lawton's credibility as a witness is confirmed. Lawton would not have made that statement if the facts contained in it were false or untrue. He would have known that facts mentioned by him would likely be closely scrutinized and tested. So this is another reason to accept his statement as being correct. The other issue is that if Lawton was fabricating his statement, as some have now suggested he was, then why did he not simply come out and say that Feigenbaum had actually confessed to being Jack the Ripper? After all who could rebut this, certainly not Feigenbaum?

It is also fact that serial killers tend to start their killings at a relatively young age. In the case of Feigenbaum I would suggest that Mrs. Hoffman was not his first and only victim, as some researchers would suggest. There are also researchers who suggest that Feigenbaum could not have been Jack the Ripper due to the fact that Mrs. Hoffman was not a prostitute and she was killed indoors.

I would remind them of two important issues, the first being the fact that one of the Ripper's victims Mary Kelly was also killed indoors, so the issue of where the killer killed is not cast in stone. In addition, as a comparison, Peter Sutcliffe aka "The Yorkshire Ripper" who is now a convicted serial killer, who killed many women in the mid 1970s; he initially started killing prostitutes whom he picked up in his car and murdering them inside his car. However, he later went on to prey on single women walking alone at night. At one point there was a lull of 11 months between his murders, so for those who would say Jack the Ripper suddenly stopped in November 1888 should not dismiss Feigenbaum simply because that specific murder did not match previous Ripper crimes.

I have now set out below details and my observations regarding all of the unsolved murders I uncovered in Germany and the USA and the two early London murders:

April 1863 London

Emma Jackson, a prostitute aged 28 and single was found murdered in a room in a brothel in St Giles, Bloomsbury. She went there with a man described as being foreign. There are no other details of this man. A room for the night was paid for. Nothing more of her or the man was seen until the following morning when the room was entered. She was found lying on her back on the bed, her feet touching the floor. One arm lay on her chest, one on her abdomen. She was wearing stockings and a chemise, which had been turned, below her breasts. The upper parts of the bedclothes, her head, hair and neck were saturated with blood and there were blood spots on the wall by the corner of the bed. She had five wounds to her throat, and the cause of death was partly by suffocation and partly by blood loss from the throat cutting. Her body had blood smears and bloodied fingerprints over arms, thighs and buttocks and her body had been moved across from the position on the bed where the throat cutting had taken place, after death. Coins and a thimble were found in the centre of the bed under the body, so there was no robbery motive. No one was ever arrested for this murder and to date this remains unsolved.

December 24th 1872 London

The murder occurred in a lodging house at Great Coram Street in the centre of London. The victim was Harriet Buswell. She had left her lodgings at about 10pm that night after borrowing a shilling (5p) from a fellow lodger, and had returned with a male guest, supposedly a German, around midnight. She had returned home with bags of apples, oranges and nuts as well as her guest, and was then able to pay her landlady half a sovereign (50p). The man was heard to leave the house at 6.30am on Christmas morning. At about midday, other occupants of the house, concerned about not seeing her, opened the locked door to her room and found her brutally murdered her throat had been cut.

It is unclear as to whether the police merely had suspicions or any direct evidence but they went to Ramsgate and arrested the chaplain of a German ship Dr. Gottgried Hessell. Following interrogation and seemingly reliable identification evidence they charged Hessell with the murder. However, the case was thrown out at court due to the identification evidence being deemed to be unreliable and the fact that the police had not interviewed the alibi witness given by Dr. Hessell. This case still remains unsolved. Sadly no details of Dr. Hessell are known (age, description etc.) and one significant matter regarding this murder is that another witness who was never called (I wonder why?) gave a statement to the police.

The witness was a greengrocer who stated he served the victim with fruit at about 12.40am. He gave a description of the man with her: "*The man looked like a mechanic. He had on dark, but common clothes. He was a stern-looking young man, and I should know him again. I guess him to be about 5' 6" to 5' 8" in height. He had small black spots like moles on his face. He was a dark-complexioned aged about 24-25 years."* Perhaps the reason he was never called was that his description was totally different to Dr. Hessell. In any event this case was never solved.

Having regard to Feigenbaum's age when arrested he could have been able to commit these murders. Due to the passage of time there is no record of Feigenbaum's whereabouts on the dates of both murders.

In the earlier chapter on the murder of Mary Kelly I made mention of the Metropolitan Police file numbered MEPO 18/1 and the Crime Record Book. Another entry in that book related to the murder of Harriet Buswell. This file however had a Special Branch number SB 77. The entry was

amongst a number of other entries in the book relating to the Whitechapel murders. This raised a number of questions. Did the police suspect that the same killer who murdered Buswell was also responsible for the Whitechapel murders, and why was Special Branch involved? The latter question would later become even more important.

April 11th 1890 Hurley, Wisconsin USA

The murder of Laura Whittlesay as reported in the Northern Star Newspaper, Wisconsin and a newspaper from Bessemer, Michigan.
Hurley was last night the scene of a murder that equals in horror any of the Whitechapel crimes. Early this morning the body of Laura Whittlesay, alias Lottie Morgan, a woman of the demi-monde, was found in the rear of Ives' saloon, the toughest place in town. Over the right eye was a deep, long cut which caused her death. An axe was discovered with bloodstains upon it in a shed nearby. This was undoubtedly the weapon used by the murderer. A revolver identified as belonging to the victim was found near her head. None of the chambers were empty. Several valuable diamond rings and other jewellery and over $20 in cash were found on the body showing conclusively that the deed was prompted by other motives than robbery. The Morgan woman was last seen about eleven o'clock in John Sullivan's saloon, from whence she started up an alley towards her rooms. The murderer was probably lying in wait for her and struck her and left her as she fell. The only explanation offered at all plausible is that she was killed by a jealous lover of whom she had quite a number. The police say there is no clue to the perpetrator of the ghastly crime. Lottie Morgan was a favourite actress here in the balmy days of Hurley variety theatres but has since fallen to the lowest depths.

Bessemer, Michigan. April 11th
Lottie Morgan, who was about twenty-seven-years-old and belonged to the demi-monde, was found murdered behind a saloon in Hurley this morning. Her head was split open, cut off and awfully mutilated with an axe. The police are working on a clue. This is a Jack the Ripper case.

This crime remains undetected. The first positive link to both Whitechapel and Feigenbaum is that the victim in this murder was a prostitute. The second positive link is that William Lawton stated he knew Feigenbaum to have been in Wisconsin at the time. I did find official

records that showed a Carl Zahn resided in Waukesha County, Wisconsin at that time, but I was unable to confirm whether they are the same person.

The third positive link is the fact that the motive for this murder was not robbery, nor were the motives for the Whitechapel murders or the earlier aforementioned London murders. The fourth positive link is that no one was ever arrested for this murder and it remains to this day undetected just like the Whitechapel murders.

The negative point of this case is the weapon used, in this case it was an axe. However, if Feigenbaum was in this location firstly we don't know how long he had been there, or what he was doing there. He may well have known the location very well by reason of frequenting or working casually there, or perhaps he was possibly passing through. The way Lawton describes Feigenbaum would categorize him as a homicidal psychopath. Feigenbaum stated he had a burning desire to kill and mutilate women, which he could not control. Could it have been the fact that on this occasion, perhaps fuelled by drink or desire, and being unable to suppress the urge to kill made him take advantage of the situation and use whatever weapon available to him in order to fulfil his desire? Or could he have been working as a gardener/handyman in that location and would have had easy access to the shed and the axe?

Referring back to the Mary Kelly murder there was a suggestion that perhaps an axe had also been used to inflict some of the mutilations and cuts to her body.

April 28th 1890 Benthen, Germany

As reported in the Indiana Democrat, Pennsylvania, USA 30th April 1890.

Another frightful atrocity, similar to those committed by Jack the Ripper was reported from Benthen, a German town, on the Polish frontier. The body of a woman was found behind the Military hospital in that town. The abdomen having been cut open from the navel down, and the rest of the body subjected to savage mutilations including the face which was subjected to the same mutilations as those inflicted on Mary Kelly's face. The victim was identified as the wife of a local tailor.

This crime remains undetected. This murder took place a short time after the Wisconsin murder. The question is could Feigenbaum have been responsible for both or only one or neither? Both are believed to have been committed by the killer known Jack the Ripper. However, as can be seen, if Feigenbaum had committed both of these murders then of course he would have had to leave the USA and then return to Germany. It would have been possible as the steamships took only nine days to travel from New York to Germany. Of course, if he was working at the time as a merchant seaman on a passenger vessel sailing back and forth between the USA and Germany then without a doubt it would be have been possible for him to have committed both murders, and as previously stated there were steamships operating between Germany and the USA which owned the merchant vessel the Reiher previously mentioned in relation to the Whitechapel murders.

The negative side of this murder is that the victim was not a prostitute and a local doctor was arrested but never charged. It is believed he was having an extramarital relationship with the victim. In the absence of anyone ever being convicted of the murder it should not be dismissed as being the work of Jack the Ripper as was suggested at the time.

April 23rd/24th[h] 1891 Jersey City, New Jersey USA

The Carrie Brown murder.

Carrie Brown an elderly prostitute checked into the East River Hotel New Jersey, on the southeast corner of Catherine Slip and Water Streets, with a man between 10:30 and 11:00 on the night of April 23rd. Her lifeless body was discovered lying on the bed the next morning, naked from the armpits down, according to the night clerk who found her. Her body was mutilated, she had wounds to her lower abdomen her vaginal area, and she had been strangled with a piece of cloth. The doctor who performed the autopsy, named Jenkins, is said to have thought that the killer had attempted to completely gut his victim. The murder weapon was never found. A man was later charged and sentenced for this murder but was later freed on appeal having been found to be totally innocent.

The Carrie Brown murder was always looked upon by some as being the work of Jack the Ripper. George Chapman, a Jack the Ripper suspect who I investigated and concluded was not Jack the Ripper, was suspected as being

responsible for this murder. But could Carrie Brown have been a Ripper victim? Looking at her murder in the same way as the Wisconsin murder there are also positive points and negative points in relation to Feigenbaum, Whitechapel, and Jack the Ripper.

The positive points are that Carrie Brown was also a prostitute, she was also mutilated and a knife used. She was also strangled. It is also a fact that some of the Whitechapel victims were also strangled. Brown was killed in a room, and we know Mary Kelly was also killed in a room. As far as Feigenbaum is concerned we know he was in the USA at the time of her murder and was known to commit a similar murder in this area in 1894. So there is every reason to suggest he could have been there at the time of her murder.

The man seen entering the building with her was described as aged about 32, five feet eight inches in height, of slim build, with a long, sharp nose and a heavy, light-coloured moustache. He was clad in a dark-brown cutaway coat and black trousers and wore an old black bowler hat with a heavily dented crown. He was described as a foreigner, possibly a German. The description given by the witness is questionable in any event, as the police at the time did not believe the accuracy of this description given by the witness who saw them entering the hotel. It does not fit Feigenbaum by reason of the moustache and the age. However, it is not known how Feigenbaum looked and dressed in 1891. So he could have been the killer. Later evidence I obtained would throw up a possible link between this murder and the murder of Catherine Eddowes in Whitechapel on September 30th.

October 26th 1891 Berlin Germany

Bismarck Daily Tribune October 27th 1891

The body of a woman, well known in the haunts of dissipation, was found lying on the floor of her room Saturday night frightfully mutilated. It is believed in the police circles that the woman was a victim of Jack the Ripper of Whitechapel fame. The victim was seen to enter the house with a stranger about 2 o'clock a.m. and shortly afterwards the man was seen to go away. Fifteen minutes later the woman was found dead, lying on the floor dressed, even to the matter of gloves. The body of the woman was

nearly severed, and was ripped from the neck down. It seems that another woman tried to enter the room before the awful crime was committed. Her attempt disturbed the assailant, who rushed out, pushing aside several who were in the way. The inmates of the house were awakened by the screams, and the unknown was hotly pursued, but he escaped. The murder weapon was never found.

This crime remains undetected. Having read the report it is somewhat ambiguous, as it is unclear as to whether the man chased was the same man who had entered with the woman initially or whether there were two different men one being the killer, the other totally innocent, who came across the body and did not want to be looked upon as the killer. In any event there is no description given. However, it highlights a second murder committed in Germany both with many similarities to the Whitechapel murders, and we do have a German suspect in Carl Feigenbaum who by reason of his travels could have been in Germany at that time.

January 31st 1892 New Jersey USA

The murder of Elizabeth Senior.

The victim was a 73 year old woman named Elizabeth Senior who was found murdered in her own home in New Jersey close to the Carrie Brown murder scene in 1891. Mrs. Senior was found with her throat cut and she had been stabbed repeatedly. Robbery appeared to have been the motive however it was the nature of the killing that was of interest to me. The murder weapon was never found.

The murder of Elizabeth Senior creates more questions than answers. It was the first murder I had investigated where on first indications appear to show a motive, that being robbery. However, with regards to the murder for which Feigenbaum was convicted for, I would suggest that this should not be accepted as fact. Was the murder of Elizabeth Senior a robbery, which went wrong? Was the offender disturbed and then forced to kill her? If this was the case then it is identical to the murder of Julia Hoffman for which Feigenbaum was convicted. Was the killer of Elizabeth Senior Feigenbaum and after killing her did he steal property as an afterthought?

The only positives that can be drawn are that the killer used a knife to cut her throat and she was stabbed repeatedly and that Feigenbaum was known

to be in that location when committing the murder in 1894.

Furthermore, as can be seen not all of the aforementioned murders resulted in the victims being killed in the same way. Some of the victims were stabbed repeatedly in frenzied attacks, others had their throats cut and their bodies were then subjected to mutilations. These differences to some people suggest that these victims were not all murdered by the same killer. However, there is a plausible explanation, which I would suggest they all could have perhaps been victims to the same killer.

In the case of some of the victims it would seem that the killer may have had an advantage over them i.e. being able to initially attack them from behind in the dark after gaining their confidence, therefore if a man were skilled in the art of killing with a knife it would be much easier to cut the throats of the victims. But in other cases whereby the victims may have had the opportunity to initially resist, then stabbing them repeatedly would be an easier option open to the killer.

Looking yet again at the murder of Juliana Hoffman, this is of course the most important murder of the whole investigation. As has been documented it was suggested that the motive for her murder may have been theft. Looking at all the circumstances surrounding her murder as I have described that may not have been the case.

When examined the knife used by Feigenbaum had traces of old dried blood. Now it is an accepted fact that serial killers will as a rule use the same murder weapon. No knives were ever found at the scenes of any of the Whitechapel murders. However, a knife was found at the scene of the Carrie Brown murder so if Feigenbaum had been her killer he could have dropped it or left it behind forcing him to obtain a new one.

When Feigenbaum’s room was searched following the murder of Mrs. Hoffman as previously stated a cloth was found in his room, which housed the knife used to kill Mrs. Hoffman and also a whetstone for sharpening the knife. The knife the police recovered bore a maker’s mark from Madison, Wisconsin clearly confirming that Feigenbaum had been to Wisconsin as Lawton had suggested.

Further investigative work would uncover an interesting and apparently unsolved Ripper-like murder in Wisconsin in 1893. This murder was

reported in a number of newspapers of the day one of those being:

Elkhart Daily Review August 21st 1893

"An atrocious murder was committed at Perkinstown, a small village west of here. The victim was a fallen woman who lived in a shanty about half a mile from the village, and about one mile from a logging camp operated by Z Darwin. When found her body was found with knife wounds 39 in number, probably inflicted while she was struggling for life, as the greater part of the wounds were on the hands and arms. The left side of her throat was cut. The large arteries being severed, and her face was hacked and slashed in a frightful manner. The woman's name is Konneamn and her home Schofield, Marathon County, Wisconsin. A man whose name is unknown has been arrested for the crime, and is now in jail here. When arrested his clothing was soiled with blood. He was a workman in Darwin's camp and his employers say he believes the man insane. The circumstances point to the guilty man as he was seen going towards the shanty only a short time before the crime was discovered. And he had previously quarreled with the woman."

It should be noted that there is no trace in any of the newspapers stating that the suspect had been charged with this murder. Nor are there any details of the name of the suspect in question. It can only be assumed that the police were either able to eliminate him or simply did not have enough evidence to bring a charge. This unsolved Wisconsin murder therefore adds more credibility to Feigenbaum's lawyer's subsequent press statement following Feigenbaum's execution. It is also interesting in as much as that this murder is almost identical to the murder of Martha Tabram on August 7th 1888, where she was stabbed 39 times.

As far as the USA and German murders are concerned as I have highlighted there are similarities linking each of them, which suggest Feigenbaum could have been responsible for some or even all of them. But was he Jack the Ripper and responsible for the Whitechapel Murders? There are also dissimilarities between the American/German murders and the Whitechapel murders, one is the MO. The Whitechapel murder victims were all prostitutes. Two of the American victims were however not prostitutes and were murdered off the street. So the question is can a serial

killer change their MO? Well in some case the answer is yes. I believe this is one such case.

Whitechapel at the time of the murders was different to any other part of the UK, and probably most other major cities and ports worldwide. It is a fact Whitechapel was a poor crime-ridden area with a high number of prostitutes of all levels plying their trade day and night. The narrow cobbled streets and alleyways were often fogbound and dimly light with gaslights, which often went out or were extinguished. This would have been perfect cover for Feigenbaum to stalk and fulfil his grisly desire to murder and mutilate by befriending prostitutes who were so desperate to earn money just to survive they would go anywhere and do almost anything, making them easy prey.

Why Feigenbaum finally decided to go to live in the USA we do not know. However, when he initially arrived in America he would have encountered a new way of life. There were obviously areas where prostitutes solicited but these would have been so different from Whitechapel. He had told Lawton that he had tried to suppress his urges and the time gaps between the murders suggested he had, but inevitably the desire and the urge overcame him and with psychotic killers they have to succumb to their desires. We know that two of the US victims were prostitutes but the later two victims were not and we know that Feigenbaum killed one of these. This shows quite clearly that a killer can change his MO.

As I continued with my investigation the emergence of the new facts, which collectively put together made a strong case for Carl Feigenbaum having some involvement in the Whitechapel murders and being the elusive Jack the Ripper. These facts are that the first murder in what I believe to be a catalogue of horrendous murders committed by Feigenbaum could have been the Whitechapel murder of Martha Tabram on August 7th 1888. There were no other recorded murders in the UK, which were suggested as being connected to Jack the Ripper before that date. There were no other similar undetected murders in Europe or elsewhere before that date. So if Feigenbaum was Jack the Ripper where was he prior to August 1888?

Well it has been documented that he was a merchant seaman but did he spend all of his life at sea? Lawton his lawyer had stated that Feigenbaum

had told him he had these urges to kill why had they not manifested before? Or perhaps they had. What if in Germany he had attempted such atrocities before and had not succeeded in actually killing someone and as a result had been apprehended and imprisoned or incarcerated in an asylum? He may have then been released having served a sentence, or he could have been granted a pardon.

It was the custom in Germany in Victorian times that when a new German Emperor ascended to the throne, he would grant pardons to prisoners. It is known that a large number of these prisoners when released took up work as merchant seamen. Coincidentally in June 1888 Prince Wilhelm II became emperor so Feigenbaum could have been released under such a pardon.

At 11am on 27th April 1896 was the final chapter on Jack the Ripper about to be written? Feigenbaum was transferred from the condemned cell on death row in Sing Sing Prison to the execution chamber. Warden Sage, two keepers, and Father Creeden of Sing Sing Prison, attended him. During his death march he repeated the prayers of the Roman Catholic Church and kissed the crucifix, which he carried before him. Feigenbaum was self-possessed and took his seat in the electric chair without any urging. As the straps were being buckled, he took Warden Sage's hand warmly kissed it, and with a smile wished the warden and the priests goodbye. He then took off his spectacles and handed them to Father Bruder, with the request that they be buried with his body.

The death mask was then adjusted and at 11.16am an electric current of 1820 volts with amperage of 7.5 was turned on and continued for 20 seconds when it was reduced to 300 volts. Whereby it was kept for 40 seconds and then turned off. After a few seconds a second shock of 1820 volts was given, when it had been turned off doctors pronounced Feigenbaum dead.

Feigenbaum's body was then removed to the operating room where the autopsy took place. It showed that death must have been instantaneous. He made his will that same morning supposedly leaving money in a German bank in New York to his sister, reserving $90 to pay his funeral expenses. The warden and the clergymen said that he even protested his innocence of

the crime for which he was convicted right up to the moment that he went to the electric chair.

Following his execution prison records show that his body was taken to a Roman Catholic cemetery in Poughkeepsie, New York where he was buried. This cemetery was probably St Peter's Roman Catholic Church Cemetery; this was the only Roman Catholic Church cemetery in that area at that time. Burial records from this cemetery were apparently destroyed in a fire in the 1900s, so the actual whereabouts of his grave is unknown.

Ongoing investigative work revealed what I believe positively confirmed the real identity of Carl Feigenbaum. It was suggested at his trial that his real name was Anton Zahn. I found out that Anton Zahn was born in Gau-Bickelheim, and did in fact have a sister called Magdalena and a brother called Johann. It is unclear as to whether this brother is the same person named John mentioned during the trial of Feigenbaum, and the same person who gave a press interview in New York the day before the execution.

During that press interview Feigenbaum's brother John stated that he knew his brother had been travelling around the Midwest of America and mentioned Wisconsin and Chicago. This in itself now corroborates what Lawton told the press. His brother also confirmed that Feigenbaum had been working as a merchant seaman on a Bremen based ship but stated that was not till 1891 and then left the sea in 1892. However, he could have been lying to protect him... It would suggest that he was lying to protect his brother because despite owning up to being his brother he never told the press the correct family name or the correct name of his murderous brother.

We know that Feigenbaum was a compulsive liar as was proven at his trial and corroborated by the trial transcript, which I obtained in its entirety. Although during his cross-examination Feigenbaum stated that although he had been using the name Anton Zahn and had been found in possession of letters relating to Anton Zahn he was not in fact Anton Zahn but really Carl Feigenbaum. He stated that he was related to Anton Zahn by reason of the fact that Zahn's father and his mother were brothers and sisters. If I am right then we know that there was a Carl Feigenbaum who was a merchant seaman and whose identity Zahn may have assumed at some point, perhaps they even served together as merchant seamen.

Another piece of evidence which later came to light and I believe is significant in the case against Feigenbaum came from an article I discovered in the National Police Gazette dated May 16th 1896. It shows another interview Lawton gave to the press following Feigenbaum's execution. The article reads:

"I have a statement to make," he said, "which may throw some light on this case. Now that Feigenbaum is dead and nothing more can be done for him in this world, I want to say as his counsel that I am absolutely sure of his guilt in this case, and I feel morally certain that he is the man who committed many, if not all of the Whitechapel murders. Here are my reasons, and on this statement I pledge my honor:

"When Feigenbaum was in the Tombs awaiting trial I saw him several times. The evidence in his case seemed so clear that I cast about for a theory of insanity. Certain actions denoted a decided mental weakness somewhere. When I asked him point-blank, 'Did you kill Mrs. Hoffman?' he made this reply: 'I have for years suffered from a singular disease, which induces an all-absorbing passion; this passion manifests itself in a desire to kill and mutilate the woman who falls in my way. At such times I am unable to control myself.'

"In pondering over this statement of Feigenbaum's I began to wonder whether the sensation he described might not form an explanation of other cases. I already knew that he had been working for many years as fireman on the Atlantic liners, sometimes on the Bremen boats, sometimes on the White Star, and at others on the French and Inman lines. He ceased to follow the sea about six years ago.

"On my next visit to the Tombs I asked him whether he had not been in London at various times during the whole period covered by the Whitechapel murders. 'Yes, I was,' he answered. I asked him whether he could not explain some of those cases on the theory which he had suggested to me, and he simply looked at me in reply. When I asked him again whether he was or was not guilty of Mrs. Hoffman's murder, he said: 'I'll affirm when I go on the stand and God will believe me just as well.'

"You will remember the cases of murder and mutilation of women in Wisconsin some years ago. On the trial we had some evidence that this man

had frequently been in Wisconsin. The long knife with which Mrs. Hoffman was killed, and the whetstone produced at the trial bore the marks of a Wisconsin firm at Madison, I think. These both belonged to Feigenbaum, and he had carried them for some time.

"Now we had no money and could not employ experts on insanity. To admit that Feigenbaum committed the crime in view of the motive alleged by the prosecution was fatal unless I had expert testimony to back it. And accordingly we went to the jury on the theory that Weibel, Feigenbaum's unknown companion, that night, had committed the murder."

In support of the remarkable theory set up by Mr. Lawton there are these facts: The throat of Mrs. Hoffman had been gashed across again and again. Feigenbaum stood over her, with the bed-clothes pulled down and the knife upraised, so as to begin mutilation of the body, when young Hoffman awoke and saw him.

In every case of murder in Whitechapel the throat of the victim had been cut with a long, sharp knife, which might have been of the kind carried by Feigenbaum. In every case the body was horribly mutilated.

Feigenbaum admits that he was frequently in London at different periods during the time covered by the murders, which extended from 1887 until the summer of 1891. His description as he was seen yesterday fully answers that of the man seen with two of those unfortunates, Mary Jane Kelly and Elizabeth Stride. Only on these occasions was the Whitechapel murderer ever seen.

In the case of old Shakespeare, who was butchered in this city, the description of the man who went with her into the room in the East River Hotel corresponded with that of the Whitechapel mutilator. And Feigenbaum's appearance without his beard, which he occasionally wore, exactly corresponded with that description.

The testimony of the witnesses at the Inquest on the Whitechapel women and on Shakespeare agreed on this point, that the murderer spoke German or with a strong German accent, and seemed to belong to the sea.

The story is a most remarkable one, and it may be the famous Whitechapel fiend is dead.

It is interesting to note that he had apparently been a soldier in the Prussian Army and had fought at the Battle of Gravelotte in 1870. As a soldier he would have no doubt been skilled in the art of using a bayonet or knife to cut the throats of the enemy. If one looks at the way the Whitechapel women were murdered and the force used to cut their throats to the point of decapitation and the same with Mrs. Hoffman it adds further weight to the belief that Feigenbaum without a doubt could have been responsible for one some or all of the Whitechapel murders and even some of those murders in other countries. The article also indicated that Feigenbaum admitted to being in London at the time of the murders.

CHAPTER EIGHT

THE MEDICAL EXPERTS

I subsequently published the results of my investigation up until that time in a reissue in 2007 of my book "*Jack the Ripper: The 21st Century Investigation"* which contained all the new evidence gathered on the case.

Despite presenting the results of what I perceived to be an unbiased investigation, which quite clearly has now cast a major doubt about a number of important previously accepted aspects of the case for over 125 years.

There were those who would not accept the results of my investigation. One major aspect of this investigation that was not widely accepted was my suggestion that other persons removed the organs and not the killer from Chapman and Eddowes, and in the Eddowes case the issues regarding the apron piece.

In an attempt to conclusively prove or disprove this theory in greater depth I set out to add even more corroboration to this particular theory I had put forward. I like many others in the past had wondered whether 21st century forensic experts and technology could ever assist in trying to solve these murders. Patricia Cornwell had spent a lot of money trying to prove by modern-day forensic methods the guilt of her suspect Walter Sickert but had failed.

I enlisted the help of three experts from the world of medicine. These were Dr. Ian Calder a pathologist, Edmund Neale a consultant gynaecologist, and Phillip Harrison an eviscerator, and the manager of a hospital mortuary. The latter is involved in the removal of organs from deceased persons on a daily basis. I provided them all with full details of all the murders together with the inquest and original post-mortem reports and asked them to comment on the issues regarding the removal of the organs which I had raised. Their statements are set out below and make very interesting reading.

PHILLIP HARRISON

I have worked at Bedford Hospital Mortuary for 18 years, the last eight as Manager of the Mortuary Services. I have qualified with distinction in the Certificate in Anatomical Pathology Technology and the Diploma in Anatomical Pathology Technology. This involves having an in-depth knowledge of anatomy and physiology. In my time at Bedford Hospital Mortuary I have been involved in approximately 6,000 post-mortems.

Bedford Hospital Mortuary is HM Coroners Mortuary for Bedford and the surrounding areas. This means that all sudden, unexpected deaths in the locality are dealt with at the Hospital. This would include Road Traffic Collisions, suicides etc.

The Mortuary is also used for post-mortems with regards to murder victims. Over the years I have seen many such victims of murder many with a multitude of different types of wounds and injuries. These have taken every guise from physical assaults to stabbings. My job in these cases is to assist the Home Office Pathologist with the examination. This involves helping to record injuries and assist the pathologist in an attempt to find an explanation for injuries and wounds in and upon the victims together with their patterns.

One of my main tasks is to eviscerate a body in preparation for the Pathologist to attend. He will then closely examine the organs and will attempt to establish a cause of death. Evisceration is the removal of all internal organs using skilled surgical techniques. The normal procedure is to open the body with an incision along the midline from the Adam's apple to the pubic bone. The sternum or breastbone is also removed. This is done to make as large as possible opening to examine and then remove the organs. Without doing this it would be extremely difficult to remove organs.

When removing vital organs great care needs to be taken at all times. I use surgical scalpels and other very sharp instruments; generally I use a 4-inch blade knife that is as sharp as a scalpel. I find this easier to use in tight confined spaces when eviscerating. Internal organs can be easily damaged if handled in a rough manner. There are many different ways organs are removed, either singularly or in one block. Some organs are very difficult to locate because of their position in the body. The kidneys are a prime example as they are at the rear of the abdominal cavity and encased in their own protective layer of renal fat.

As an experienced eviscerator I have been asked to examine the official records and post-mortem reports appertaining to three specific murder victims of the Whitechapel murders of 1888, which were attributed to a killer known as Jack the Ripper.

These three victims were Catherine Eddowes, Annie Chapman and Mary Kelly. I have reviewed the post-mortem reports trying to ascertain the level of expertise required to carefully remove the organs so soon after death. The other aspect of these murders I have been asked to comment on is whether the organs could have been removed by the killer at the crime scene or whether they could have been removed at another location by person or persons unknown prior to the post-mortems being carried out.

I will firstly comment on the murder of Annie Chapman. She was described in the post-mortem report as showing signs of great deprivation. I mention this as in my opinion evisceration is more difficult in a person with a poor covering of body fat. When a person is very thin the skin at autopsy loses its elasticity. It is more difficult to carefully remove organs when the opening cannot be stretched. Surgeons use a retractor to make the opening as big as possible. Surgeons need as much room as possible but would work internally in what would seem to the layperson as an impossibly small opening. The skin is very elastic and a small incision can be stretched to make it quite large.

Chapman's abdomen was laid open. For someone with anatomical knowledge and experience the small intestines are the easiest to remove from the mesenteric attachments. I would imagine the original pathologist is referring to the small intestines. With great skill and practice it is easy to remove the small intestine from its mesenteric attachments with one cut if speed was of an essence. But it does take skill and many years of practice.

I am right-handed and I would suggest the perpetrator to have been right-handed as the neck wound indicates that and the fact that the organs removed from the abdominal cavity were placed at the head of the body.

A piece of stomach was found on the left shoulder. This could have been cut and removed accidentally during the frenzied attack as the intestines, and in particular the large intestine were removed and placed to one side.

An interesting point is the removal of the pelvic organs. The report states that the uterus and its appendages and the upper portion of the vagina, and parts of the bladder had been entirely removed. To remove the appendages, the uterus, the fallopian tubes and ovaries in one frenzied attack and one slice of a blade would be almost impossible. It is a very difficult and quite a skilled undertaking to remove these organs carefully even by today's methods especially as the comment is that they were cleanly cut and the cut missed the rectum. These specific organs are in very close proximity to each other and at post-mortem are removed by a mixture of blunt dissection and sharp knife. Even doing this carefully it is still possible to damage some of the surrounding organs and tissues. There would have been no need for the killer to remove the intestines to facilitate the removal of the uterus.

It is stated that a knife of at least five to six inches long was used. It may be possible under normal modern-day hospital conditions but would have been almost impossible given the amount of mutilations and the fact that it was dark.

This brings me back to the signs of great deprivation. I would imagine that the deceased was very emaciated. This could have made the abdominal opening much tighter to work in to delicately remove the pelvic organs. The organs would have been covered in blood and probably faeces and make it difficult to see where to cut and handle the organs. The organs do not bleed but they ooze blood, and faeces would also have come out of the cut sections of the bowels. I also note that the original reports show that when the body was discovered both her legs were drawn up, indicating this is how the killer left the body. With the legs in those positions it would have been a hindrance to the killer in attempting to remove the organs. The normal position would be to have both legs flat and open to give free and unrestricted access to the abdomen.

The second report I will comment on relates to the murder of Catherine Eddowes. The injuries inflicted on the face and neck has been well documented and most of the other injuries to the face, neck and lower body occurred after death. There is no doubt she was subjected to a frenzied attack. The report states that the abdomen was opened from the xiphoid process to the pubic bone. This seems to be a much smaller incision to the one made at post-mortem allowing access to the abdominal organs.

There is difficulty in ascertaining how much elasticity remained in the deceased's tissues for the kidney and uterus to be removed. As I have previously stated deceased persons who have very little body fat covering tend to have very tight skin coverage especially over the abdomen thus making it difficult to enter the abdominal space. In Eddowes' case looking at Picture (3) taken before the post-mortem. This clearly shows a much smaller jagged incision than is described in the post-mortem report. An interesting side point about the abdominal wound is how it circled the umbilicus. The umbilicus or belly button is cartilaginous in nature and is not cut through during the initial post-mortem incision today. An experienced anatomist would have known this.

In my experience this would have made it extremely difficult for the killer to investigate the abdominal cavity and to remove any organ easily especially in almost total darkness especially if the killer was in a rush and trying to work quickly.

For the left kidney to be easily removed a person would need to be on the right side of the body as this gives easier access to the left kidney. What cannot be underestimated as briefly mentioned in the post-mortem report is the amount of blood and faecal matter that would have been present around and in the abdominal cavity. The liver was stabbed and almost cut through; this would have undoubtedly let a lot of blood into the abdominal cavity. A newly deceased does not bleed in the normal sense of the word but there is a lot of seepage of blood from the tissues and organs. This makes it even more difficult to remove organs carefully. Standard post-mortem procedures involve wearing gloves that give more of a grip when dealing with blood and body fluids. It would have been difficult for a person to grip warm and very messy organs in order to remove them carefully so soon after death.

The kidneys are situated at the back of the abdominal cavity surrounded by their own protective covering and the renal capsule and surrounding fat. The post-mortem report states that about 2 feet of the colon was removed. If the colon was removed from the left-hand side of the transverse colon and the descending colon, access to the kidney is somewhat easier. To remove the kidney from its membrane as is documented shows a high level of skill and anatomical knowledge.

The uterus was also removed without damaging any underlying tissue. This is also very difficult especially as the report says that the sigmoid colon was invaginated into the rectum very tightly. It would be difficult with a six-inch knife to carefully remove the uterus. I use surgical scalpels and have also become quite adept with a very sharp knife with a 4" blade. We have in the post-mortem room "daylight lighting". In view of the levels of light available and the time available it would have made it more difficult to remove the organs carefully, especially given the crime scene location and the level of light required. As I have stated previous if the killer was targeting specific organs for removal, as with the murder of Chapman the killer would not have needed to remove the intestines to remove the uterus.

I also note that the original reports show that when the body was found one leg was drawn up. I again refer to my previous comments with regards to the position of the body of Chapman and the hindrance having a leg drawn up when trying to access and remove organs from the abdominal cavity.

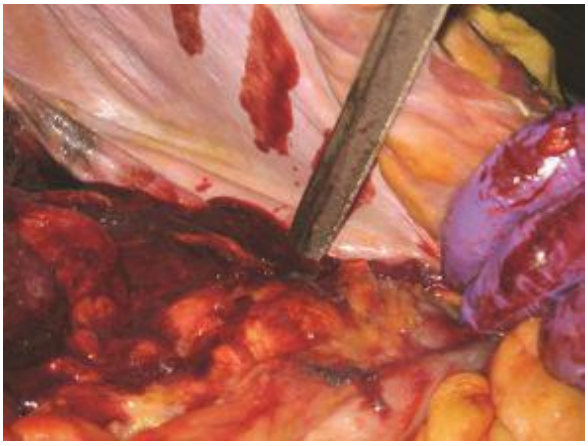
I am aware that an apron piece belonging to the victim was found a short distance away that same morning. This was described as being wet, and showed signs of blood spotting, and also contained traces of faecal matter. It has been suggested that the killer cut this apron piece for one of either three purposes. The first was to take away the uterus and the kidney from the crime scene. The second being was that he cut the piece from the apron in order to clean his hands taking it with him and then discarding it. Thirdly to clean the knife used in the murder.

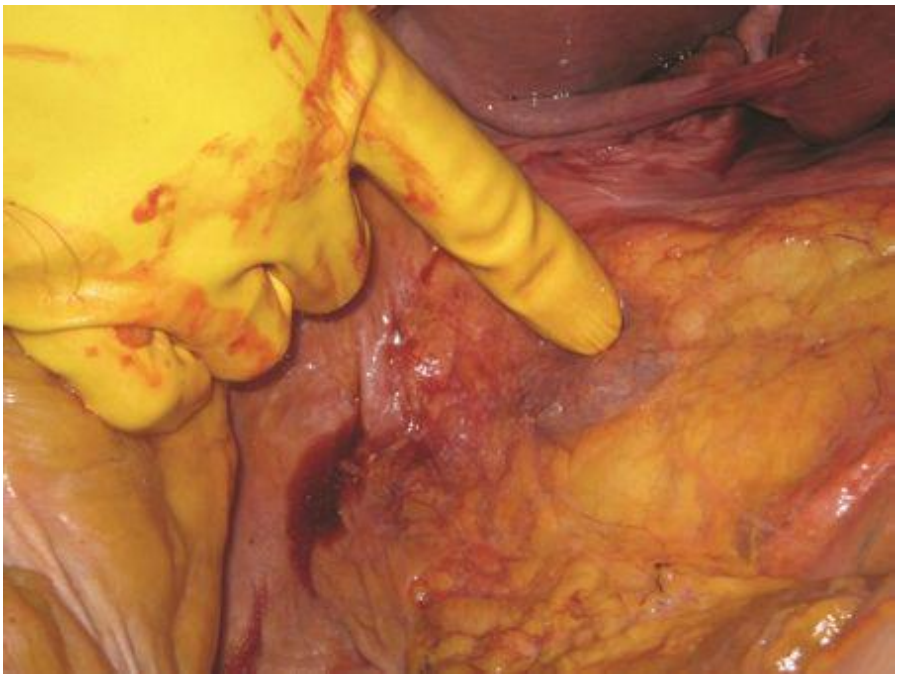
I would have expected freshly removed organs such as the kidney and uterus to leave more than blood spots on a piece of material i.e. the apron. The report does say that the right kidney was bloodless and pale it is not uncommon for organs to look very pale after serious blood loss. There would still be blood within the abdominal cavity. Along with this the perpetrator would have had very messy hands covered not only in blood but also faecal matter. I would have expected the blood on the apron piece to be quite significant.

To work in such an intricate manner and to remove the kidney carefully and the uterus without damaging the surrounding tissue with a six-inch knife would be very difficult. In the time the perpetrator had with their heightened

levels of awareness and the prospect of being caught makes this even more difficult. The emphasis is on carefully because only a person with an expert knowledge of anatomy would be able to remove the organs in the manner described and would find it very difficult if not impossible in almost total darkness.

In an effort to prove or disprove this we conducted a number of controlled experiments in the post-mortem room. Dr. Calder was able to provide a Victorian surgeon's knife with a 6-inch blade (Picture 2). Having performed an initial post-mortem incision similar to the wound seen on Eddowes, we found it was an impossible task in attempting to remove a kidney using that size knife. The difficulty is shown in the following pictures.





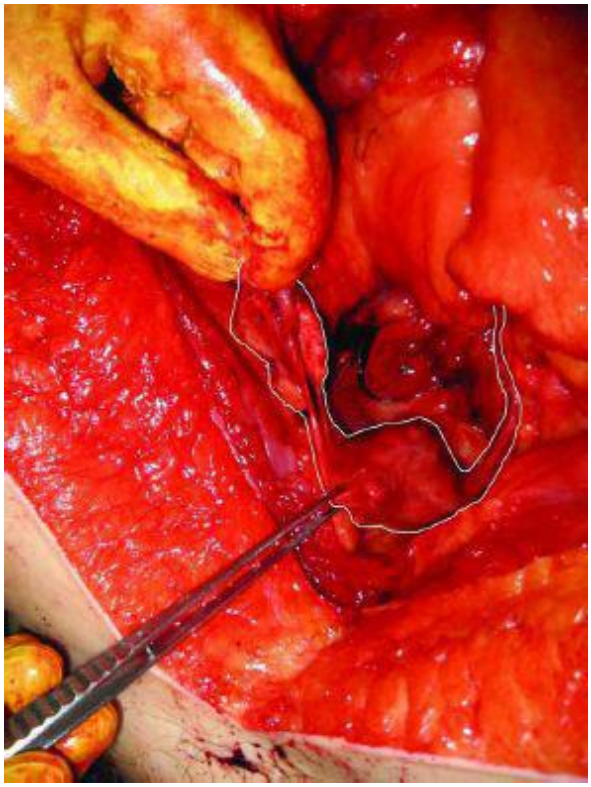
(Picture 3) shows the abdomen filled with blood and the difficulty in using the six-inch bladed knife. As far as the opening of the abdomen in the cases of Eddowes and Chapman there would have been even more blood than is shown in the abdomen due to the fact that the victims had only just died.

(Picture 4) shows the kidney inside the abdomen encased in renal fat.

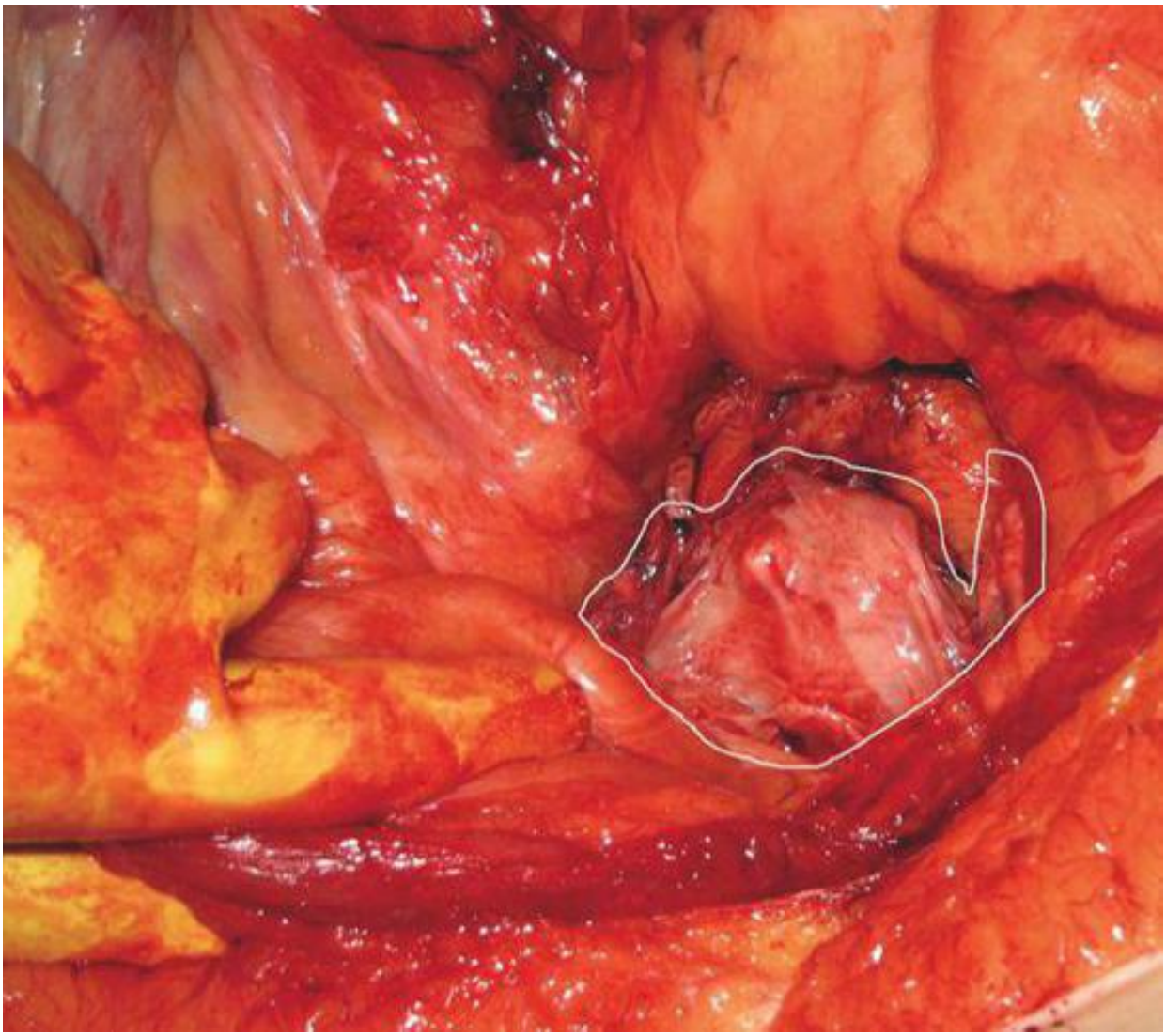
(Picture 5) shows the size of the kidney after removal. This was removed from a deceased person who had been dead for several days. It should also be noted the blood staining on the cloth following the removal. There is no sign of blood spotting on the pillowcase. In the case of a kidney removed from a recently deceased donor i.e. Eddowes there would have been much more fresh blood from that kidney and therefore even more blood staining than is shown in the picture.

I have seen the results of another controlled experiment conducted by another medical expert Mr. Neale who performed a hysterectomy and removed a uterus from a living donor. He also wrapped that uterus in a white swab leaving it for a short time and then photographing the results (Picture 6). Those results are identical to the experiment I and Dr. Calder conducted with the kidney. The results of both experiments in my opinion clearly show that Eddowes' white apron piece could not have contained the organs as has been suggested if they had then the apron piece would have been heavily bloodstained.

Dr. Calder and I also carried out our own experiment with regards to photographing and removing a uterus and its appendages from a deceased female.



(Picture 7) shows the fallopian tubes attached to the uterus, which is shown in the centre. The fallopian tubes are described in the post-mortem reports of Chapman and Eddowes as "appendages". After removing the uterus and its appendages it was photographed. In this instance it was not wrapped due to this part of the experiment having already been conducted and photographed previous.



(Picture 8) shows the uterus and its location in the abdomen. (Picture 9) shows the uterus with the fallopian tubes still attached after removal. Referring back to the case of Chapman Dr. Phillips states that the person removing the uterus of Chapman showed a high level of medical expertise. The Doctor went on to say that it would have taken him between fifteen and sixty minutes to carry out the removal of the uterus from her body. Therefore with regards to the removal of the uterus and the kidney from Eddowes extra time must be added to complete the removal of two different organs if it is to be accepted that the killer removed them.

In my opinion I do not believe that the killer of Chapman and Eddowes was responsible for removing their organs at the crime scene. Even for a highly skilled medical man given all the circumstances it would have been a daunting task which given the level of expertise of surgeons in Victorian times would also make it a lengthy process for such a person in any event. In my opinion the killer could not have removed those organs in the time known to have been available to him.

The Third report I will comment on relates to Mary Kelly. The injuries to Kelly are also horrific in nature she also had been subjected to a frenzied attack. The wounds to the extremities are well documented. The injuries to the abdominal area are of interest. The post-mortem report states that the surface of the abdomen was completely removed.

Removing this would give unhindered access to the abdominal organs. For some reason the perpetrator had gone as far as to remove the surface skin and tissue of the thighs. I would imagine this to be the front of the thighs. Cutting down this far would have exposed the pelvic contents quite significantly. In some cases the uterus is quite prominent and would be relatively easy to remove for someone who knew what they were looking for. Again we must remember that there would be a lot of blood and faecal matter, as the intestines had been removed, to make the actions more difficult.

The report does not state whether the whole of the bowel was removed. The intestinal tract is comprised of small and large bowel. The small bowel can be removed quite easily to an experienced dissector. The report also does not state that the stomach was damaged. To remove the large bowel using a knife it is quite easy to puncture the stomach. If the large bowel were removed it would make it easier to see and remove the spleen, which is hidden on the left side of the body.

The liver can be easily pulled out of its position. However, this would cause damage to the liver structure and underlying arterial structure. The report does state though that the right lung's lower lobe was broken and torn away. Perhaps the perpetrator had used enough force in ripping out the liver to tear the diaphragm on the right side and the right lung which could have been adherent to the diaphragm. These can take a great deal of force to remove.

The report does not say whether the kidneys had been carefully removed had they been so I would have expected this to be documented. In a newly deceased body the kidneys with their protective renal fat can be pulled out of position and wrenched off the aorta snapping the renal arteries and veins.

As far as the murder of Mary Kelly and the removal of her organs, which were all apparently accounted for at the crime scene. There is nothing in the report to suggest that a high degree of medical expertise was used to remove these organs or to perform the mutilations. In fact as I have previously stated the report tends to suggest that some of the organs could have been ripped out manually. It does indicate that the perpetrator must have had some human anatomical knowledge to be able to locate and remove the organs. However, in the absence of any expertise used as is suggested in the murders of Chapman and Eddowes I would suggest that if those victims' organs were removed as has been suggested by their killer, then perhaps a different killer murdered Kelly. But as previously stated my professional opinion is that the organs were not removed from Eddowes and Chapman at the crime scenes.

I have discussed the removal of the organs from the victims in great detail and in concluding I would say that if the killer was a person with medical knowledge and expertise and his intention was to murder the victims for the purpose of removing the organs surgically and skilfully, then I would not

have expected him to mutilate the abdomens of the victims in such a way that it would have made his task much more difficult than it was.

IAN CALDER

I am a Fully Registered Medical Practitioner and Consultant Pathologist. I have the basic qualifications of bachelor of Medicine and bachelor of Surgery from the University of St. Andrews. I have the additional qualifications of Doctor of Medicine, Doctor of Science, Membership of the Royal College of Physicians, Fellowship of the Royal College of Pathologists, Fellowship of the College of Pathologist of Hong Kong, Fellowship of the Faculty of Occupational Medicine of the Royal College of Physicians, Diploma in Medical Jurisprudence and Diploma in Medical Disability Assessment. I have approximately twenty-eight years of investigating sudden and unnatural deaths. I have also been involved in basic research in pathology. I have no idea as to the number of autopsies I have carried out but it must be in the tens of thousands.

I have been asked to express my opinion relating to the evisceration and mutilation of the bodies of Annie Chapman and Catherine Eddowes. Evisceration requires considerable experience and an overall awareness of anatomy, especially human anatomy. In my opinion experience in eviscerating animals requires an entirely different technique, so as a basic premise it is mercenary to consider a person with practical experience in human anatomy and/or surgery. Even in those experienced in evisceration it is not a technique, which can be done 'blind', and would have to be carried out under direct visual observation. Organs at autopsy and in fact surgery are slippery, which can cause technical problems, unless gloves are used.

In considering Catherine Eddowes, from the autopsy report it does appear she was subjected to a "frenzied attack", with injuries both post-mortem and ante-mortem distributed over the body.

The autopsy report states that the abdomen had been opened from the bottom of the sternum as far as the pubis. It is interesting to observe that this incision appeared to be irregular, which could suggest the use of a slightly blunt knife. However the incision had avoided the umbilicus (which is more difficult to incise), and this would perhaps be supportive evidence that the assailant had knowledge of this from past experience.

The kidneys are in the upper posterior of the abdomen, and are not easy to locate as they are behind major organs. In view of this the usual surgical approach is by an incision in the loin. To remove the left kidney an approach from the right side would be ergonomically easier. Technically it would be easier with visceral organs removed. However, to carry this out in the dark would be almost impossible without producing damage to other organs. This lends support to the fact that to achieve such there needed to be not only knowledge of anatomy, but experience in applying it.

To remove the uterus without adjacent damage is technically very difficult, even with a sweeping motion of a knife, even when pulling the uterus out of the bowl of the pelvis. An anatomist would not need to remove the intestines to facilitate the removal of a uterus.

It is difficult to explain the piece of cloth, which was part of an apron, which had faecal staining and blood spotting. There have been put forward three possible uses for this - cleaning the assailant's hands, wiping a knife or as wrapping material for a kidney. A kidney removed from a fresh cadaver would have a considerable amount of blood.

In the case of Annie Chapman she was a sparse female, and would suggest that the abdominal wall was without much fat and possibly lean. To remove the bowels would require expertise and experience.

The pelvic organs appear to have been removed skilfully without damage to adjacent tissues. This would be technically very difficult, as the organs are down in the bowl of the pelvis, and would require continuous observation, so as to avoid the complicated local anatomy.

Conclusion

From the evidence considered if the assailant did remove the organs from Eddowes and Chapman, he would not only to have had knowledge of anatomy, but experience in using it. Even in the experienced, such evisceration would have to be carried out by observation in a well-lit area. Therefore there has to be a doubt about the removal of these organs at the crime scenes. I also suggest that there is a doubt about when and where all the abdominal injuries to the victims occurred. In my opinion the killer could not have removed the uterus and kidney within the time frame suggested available to him at the crime scene.

I have also looked at the reports relating to the removal of the organs from Mary Kelly. In my opinion these removals do not appear to have been made by someone with specific medical anatomical knowledge.

EDMUND NEALE

I have been a consultant obstetrician and gynaecologist for almost 16 years. I am a fellow of the Royal College of Obstetricians and Gynaecologists, and a senior examiner for them.

I have viewed the post-mortem reports of the victims, Annie Chapman and Catherine Eddowes. I have looked at them from the perspective of a modern-day gynaecologist, but have tried to extrapolate back to practice in 1888.

In both cases I note the severity and depth of the fatal neck wounds, suggesting an extremely sharp blade was used, as it marked the anterior surface of the vertebrae.

Catherine Eddowes

In addition to the post-mortem report I have also seen a drawing and a photograph of the body prior to the post-mortem.

I am first struck by the jagged appearance of the abdominal wound. This does not look like a surgical incision. The irregular nature of it, and some of the minor wounds to underlying organs suggests to me that possibly the knife entered the abdomen which was then opened by pulling the knife upwards as opposed to a surgical incision where one would press down with the blade on the skin. In other words the irregular line suggests the abdomen was opened from inside out rather than outside in.

Someone with anatomical knowledge could accomplish the removal of the uterus quite quickly once access has been obtained. Traction on the organ would allow division of the tissues on either side with one sweep of the knife. The only task that would then remain would be to cut horizontally to remove the organ. In the case of Catherine Eddowes, I note the cervix of the uterus was left behind. Today this would be seen as an integral part of the uterus and therefore I would have expected it to be removed as well if the organ was required for experimentation. However, I have no knowledge of Victorian anatomists' view of the cervix.

In respect of the piece of apron and whether it was used as a sanitary towel or not, it is quite possible that even in Victorian times women in their late forties would still be menstruating and may well have used this piece of rag as a sanitary towel. Blood spotting is a part of the female menstrual cycle. I have not been shown a photograph of the apron piece, which shows the blood spotting as described. I therefore cannot give a definitive answer as whether the blood spotting on the apron piece is consistent with the menstrual cycle.

I have provided a photograph of a surgical swab showing the effect of wrapping a recently removed normal sized uterus from a live donor. (Picture 7). This clearly shows a heavy concentration of oxygenated deep-red blood, which has heavily stained the swab.

Annie Chapman

My comments above on the removal of the uterus will again apply. I note that in this case it is reported that the appendages were removed. In addition the uterus and cervix were removed, the transverse incision cutting through the vagina. However, in this case a portion of bladder was also removed.

Anatomically the bladder is loosely attached in front of the cervix and must be reflected out of the way when performing a hysterectomy, (removing the uterus). In patients who have had a pelvic infection (as a prostitute may well have done) this attachment may be quite dense and tough. The removal of a portion of the bladder suggests to me that speed was important, but does not help determine where or when it was done. However, I note that in this case it seems to have been important to remove the female pelvic organs intact (i.e. uterus, cervix, ovaries and fallopian tubes), which could, in conjunction with a nephrectomy suggest removal for experimentation.

I agree with the suggestion at the time that to have removed a kidney would require a degree of knowledge, but it is interesting that it is the left kidney that was removed rather than the right, which would probably be more difficult to access because of the liver, thereby making the task of removal more difficult to accomplish.

Conclusions

As to the time and feasibility of undertaking these procedures in semi-darkness, the doctors' assessment at the time of the inquest was probably

around about right. To my mind the various stab wounds noted in the livers would again support my theory that the blade was stabbed in through the abdominal wall and drawn upwards rather than a surgical type incision from the outside. The uterus would be fairly easy to remove with a modicum of knowledge by pulling up hard and cutting down the sides and across the bottom. It would require more medical knowledge to understand the need to severe the mesentery of the gut in order to identify the kidney and remove it. It should also be noted that an anatomist would know that there would be no need to take out the intestines in order to remove a uterus.

PAUL LANGFORD

In pursuit of further corroborative evidence I obtained an additional statement from a master Butcher. Many people still suggest that the killer could have been a butcher or slaughterman despite this theory being negated in the murder of Annie Chapman. I therefore interviewed Paul Langford a master butcher whose statement is set out below.

I am a master butcher having worked in the meat and butchery trade for 35 years. In my early years I worked in abattoirs where I was involved in the removal of the internal organs from the carcasses of recently killed cattle, sheep and pigs.

The organs in these types of animals are located in almost similar parts of the carcass to that in a human. There is direct comparison between a human and a pig whereby the organs of a pig are almost identical in size to human organs.

In abattoirs very little care is taken in removing the internal organs from animals it is very much what is called "cut and slash" The dead carcass is hung upside down by the legs and then slit from top to bottom allowing full access to the animals internal organs making it easier to remove the various organs by the "cut and slash" process.

I have been asked if I could remove a uterus and a kidney from recently deceased human body "carefully" having regard to my experience in removing the same organs from animals.

I would probably be able to facilitate the removal of the organs but I would need there to be sufficient light and it would need to be a controlled

situation and time would be needed to complete the removal. In removing a uterus from a human body I would not need to take out the intestines, as I know the uterus sits in the lower abdomen. I would not be able to use a six-inch bladed knife to remove the kidney.

I have also been asked whether I could carefully remove these same organs in almost total darkness using a six-inch sharp bladed knife. If I were to attempt these removals from a human body in almost total darkness I would encounter many problems. The first would be the need for a big enough incision for me to be able to gain access to the stomach. The second would be trying to locate the organs, which would be wet and slippery and covered with blood from the abdomen. This in itself would cause great difficulty in gripping them sufficiently to be able to remove them carefully. I would also not want to be working with a sharp knife in an abdomen not being able to see what I was doing or where my fingers were in relation to where I was attempting to cut. I would also say that I would find it difficult to work with a long-bladed knife and could not remove a kidney using a six-inch bladed knife. If I were in a hurry to remove a kidney and were able to find the renal fat, which encases the kidney, then I would be able to grip it and rip it out by hand.

The new evidence obtained from the aforementioned experts and the experimental removals they performed together with photographic evidence supports and adds even more weight to my original theory that the killer did not remove the organs from the victims, and in the case of Eddowes did not take away those organs in an apron piece cut from her own apron.

It should also be noted that Dr. Calder casts a doubt about where and when some of the victim’s abdominal injuries were carried out. This corroborates a doubt raised previously where I suggested that some of the abdominal injuries noted by the doctors at the post-mortem could have been caused when the organs were removed at the mortuary and in order to effect those removals.

Not forgetting the Anatomy Act 1832 I previously mentioned. If we look again at the victim Chapman, Mr. Neale states the way the uterus was removed is consistent with it being removed for experimentation, and that the uterus from Eddowes was removed in a totally different way. So if both of those victims were killed by the same person and that person removed the

organs, then why were they removed in different ways? It should also be noted the method of entry into the abdomens of both these victims is also different.

This to me goes even further to suggest that the organs of both of these victims were removed by two different people at the two separate locations where the bodies were taken and left for many hours unattended before the post-mortems were carried out.

Furthermore many people, who subscribe to the theory that the killer removed the organs from Eddowes and Chapman, heavily rely on the fact that the intestines were taken out and placed in a way, which would have allowed the killer easy access to the organs. It has already been documented that anyone with anatomical knowledge would know that there would be no need to remove intestines to facilitate the removal of a uterus.

Staying with the originally accepted theory that the killer removed the organs at the crime scenes it should be noted that in the case of Chapman her legs were both drawn up. Presumably this is how the killer left the body. If that was the case it would be an almost impossible task to perform surgery and organ removal with her legs in that position. In the case of Eddowes one of her legs was also described as being drawn up so the same must apply in her case also.

I have stated previously that in my opinion the killer did not remove the organs at the crime scene of either Chapman or Eddowes. Take the case of Chapman at her inquest Dr. Phillips stated that to have performed the mutilation on her and removed the uterus it could have taken him a surgeon up to twenty minutes. Now with Eddowes in addition to removing her uterus the killer is supposed to have removed her left kidney, which is a far more difficult organ to locate and to remove, given the conditions at the crime scene.

On a final note regarding the removal of the organs and in particular those from Eddowes; I refer back to the letter sent to George Lusk chairman of the Whitechapel Vigilance Committee on 16th October. With this letter was half of a human kidney, which had been contained in a preservative. The writer of the letter (the killer) was suggesting that the kidney was from Eddowes. The kidney was examined by Dr. Oppenshaw who found that the kidney bore signs of Bright’s disease. Eddowes was also found to be suffering from

the same disease. Although some researchers suggest that the letter is a genuine letter from the killer as is the kidney.

Others subscribe to the belief that the letter is a hoax and it was sent with the kidney by a medical student. If the latter is the case I would suggest this adds further corroboration to the theory that the organs could have been removed by one of a number of bona fide medical person’s i.e. medical student in the way I have previously suggested and sent as a prank.

CHAPTER NINE

THE ANARCHIST THEORY

I would from time to time receive letters and emails from members of the public offering further information in relation to my investigation. Others would furnish me with the information in relation to departed distant relatives who they believed were Jack the Ripper. As a professional investigator you learn never to disregard any information without assessing and evaluating the content. Sadly most of the information forwarded to me in good faith by these persons turned out to be nothing more than wild speculative uncorroborated theories. I will however elaborate and highlight many of these at a later stage. However, I will mention one in particular at this stage.

In December 2008 I was contacted by a lady called Fiona Saint. From talking to her she had been taking an interest into the Whitechapel murders. She is an artist/painter in her own right; she is intelligent, intellectual and has a wealth of knowledge into the arts. Fiona had read my book and wanted to volunteer some information in relation to the new recently discovered statement I have documented in my first book, which I found in the archives of Lord Salisbury.

Lord Salisbury instructed Sir Charles Warren to have a statement taken from a man by the name of Charles De La Ree Bott, who at the time of the murders had sent letters to a number of government cabinet members stating he had information in relation to the Whitechapel murders. The statement was taken on or about November 3rd, 1888, in which Bott stated: "*Regarding the Whitechapel outrages they may have been committed by perhaps 20 persons with some connivance. There is no necessity for immediate action; they are stopped for the present unless they occur again for mere bravado."*

Little was known about De La Ree Bott, Sir Charles Warren describes him as, "*An educated man who has studied hard, and appears to have eccentric ideas, though he is probably not a lunatic"* other information to hand suggests he was also a writer and in some way was connected to or

had a great deal of knowledge of the Celtic faith. He admits to spending five years writing a book about the Celtic religion and in doing so had apparently incurred the wrath of the ritualistic Celtic priests regarding the intended publication of this book. Further investigations have revealed that there was a Charles De La Ree Breytte who was an art dealer who had close contact with many artistes of the day who are now famous names in the art world; Ms. Saint suggested these could be one and the same.

Having regard to the fact that the statement suggested no further murders would take place and of course it is known that subsequently a further murder did take place that of Mary Kelly on 8th November very little credence was taken of De La Ree Bott's statement at the time. The content of the statement suggesting a large group of people might lead us back to the theory put forward by some Ripper experts suggesting that there could have been some ritualistic or Masonic involvement in the murders.

However, with regards to the murder of Mary Kelly as previously stated many people including myself have kept an open mind as to whether she was in fact a victim of the killer known as Jack the Ripper.

Ms. Saint also wanted my help in investigating a theory she also had in relation to the Whitechapel murders. I do not intend to elaborate or comment on that as Ms. Saint is still pursuing other lines of enquiry and I am given to understand she intends to publish the results of her specific investigation. For the record I will say that I agreed to help her with her work and in doing I cast a professional eye over the extensive research she had already carried out and ultimately passed on my comments and advised her accordingly.

So what was the information Ms. Saint wanted to give to me regarding The De La Ree Bott statement? Little did I know at the time that this would lead to another mystery within the Ripper mystery and would again cast a doubt about many aspects of this 125 year old murder mystery. It would also lead me to new evidence and a possible link the murders of Catherine Eddowes and the Carrie Brown murder in New York.

Ms. Saint suggested that the 20 referred to in De La Ree Bott's statement could be a group who called themselves Les XX (20). They were a group of artists, playwrights, and writers. The group was originally formed in

Belgium in 1883 and known to have anarchistic views, which they often made public.

Membership was by invitation only. Each year the original twenty would invite others to exhibit or perform and as the group grew it became increasingly radical; several of the original moderate members either resigned or were forced to resign. In later years some British artists were invited to join Les XX along with other foreigners. Walter Sickert had strong connections with Les XX and was invited to exhibit some of his work by them in 1887.

Other famous painters and artistes associated with Les XX over its ten-year lifespan included, Debussy, Strindberg, Cezanne, van Gogh, James Ensor, Monet, Seurat, Sisley, Toulouse Lautrec, Octave Mirbeau, Rodin, Whistler, Edvard Munch, Paul Signac, Paul Gauguin, Pissarro and his son Lucien.

In 1888 the International Workers Club in Berner Street becomes an important part of the Ripper mystery. At the time of writing it is not known exactly who the bulk of its members were. However, the uncovering of new police records may in the future tell us more and it would be interesting to see if any of the members of Les XX were actually members.

The International Workers Club offered a base for radical and trade union movements. It was an old wooden two-storey building with a spacious room for a capacity of over 200 people and contained a stage. Plays were performed at weekends invariably on Saturday or Sunday; there was a truly international gathering of Russian, Jewish, British, French, Italian, Czech, Polish and other radicals.

Interestingly also connected to the Berner Street club was a Benjamin Feigenbaum B.1860. Could he have been a relative of Carl Feigenbaum, and the reason for him to have been in Whitechapel, either as a resident during the times of the murders or as a visiting merchant seaman? The former could be a reason why his name or none of his aliases appear on the remaining crew lists for the Reiher in 1888. Or was it just another one of many coincidences that surround the Ripper mystery? Benjamin Feigenbaum was looked upon as an anarchist by the authorities in 1888. He coincidentally also immigrated to New York in 1891.

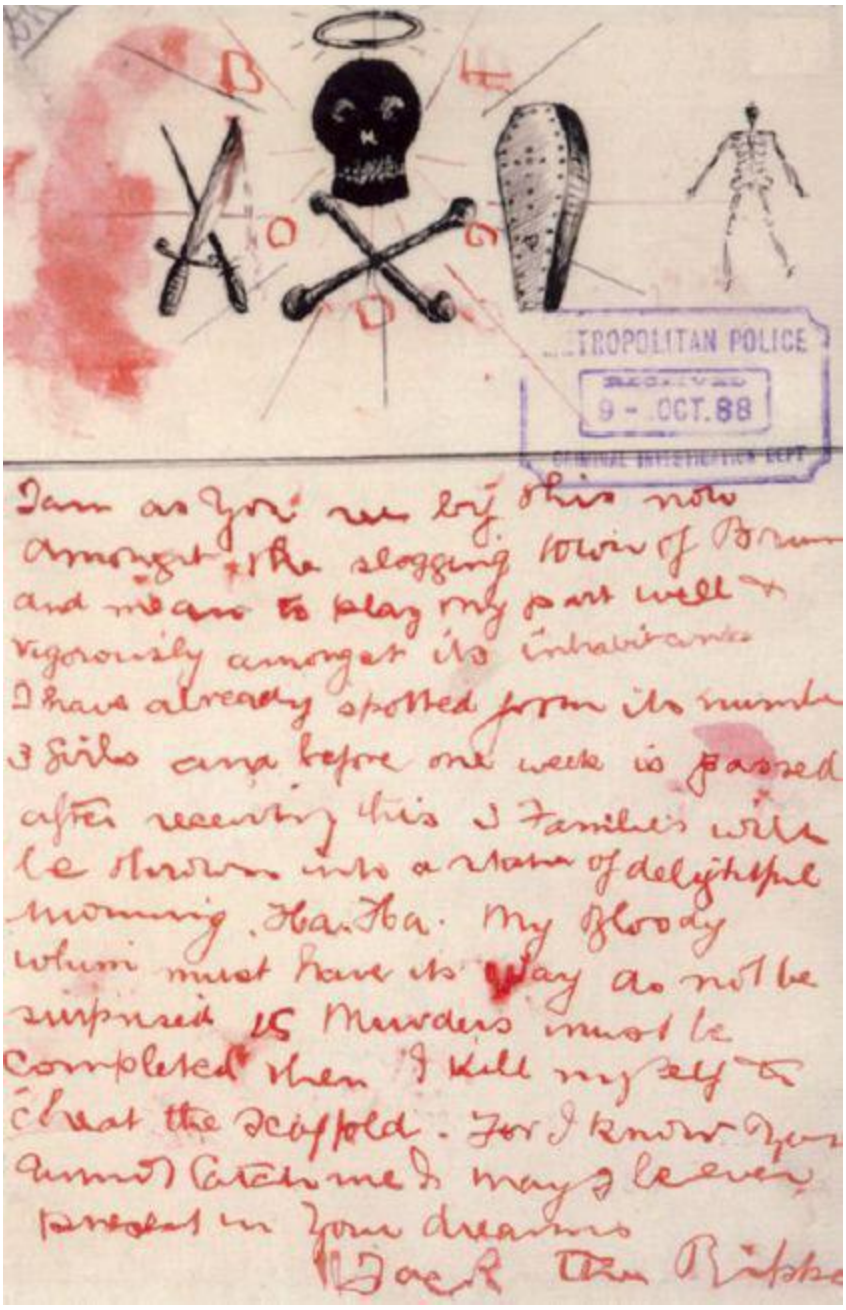
So all in all the International Workers Club in 1888 would appear to have been a hotbed for anarchists of many different nationalities and from many different walks of life including, artists, poets, and writers. It should not be totally discounted that at least one or more of the Whitechapel murders could have had political motives, given that Liz Stride's body was found almost at the door of the club. It should also be noted that a previous victim Annie Chapman was found murdered at the rear of 29, Hanbury Street. Located at 22, Hanbury Street, which was almost opposite, was the Christchurch Hall, which was also used for anarchist meetings.

The term anarchist in this context is defined as:

“An individual who advocates a political theory the main feature of which is an absence of any government or rule (this is the meaning of the word "anarchy") and occupies himself with conducting a propaganda by writing and speaking. This class of person is often, apart from the dangerous opinions he professes, harmless in himself.”

Could the Whitechapel murders have been act of “bravado” - the throwing down of a gauntlet by an international band of anarchists - to Sir Charles Warren? But was the group or any individual from or connected to Les XX responsible for one or more or all of the Whitechapel murders? If the answer is yes then what tangible evidence is there to corroborate this?

Ms. Saint cites a Ripper letter dated October 9th, 1888. This letter had two drawings set out at the top of which were two X’s is in the shape of crossed bones and crossed swords. Ms. Saint suggests this could this be the signature of Les XX. (Picture 10)


...TROPOLITAN POLICE
9 - OCT. 88
Dear as you see by this now
amongst the slogging town of Brum
and mean to play my part well &
vigorously amongst its inhabitants
I have already spotted form its number
3 girls and before one week is passed
after receiving this 3 families will
be thrown into a state of delightful
mourning. Ha.Ha. My Bloody
whom must have its way as not be
surprised as Murders must be
completed then I kill myself to
cheat the scaffold. For I know you
cannot catch me & may I leave
you a present in your dreams
Yours Jack the Ripper

This letter on its own is certainly no proof of any involvement of Les XX or any of its members in any of the Whitechapel murders. However, little did I know that new significant evidence had literally been staring everyone in the face for over 125 years. This was to be found in the photographs showing the facial mutilations of Catherine Eddowes taken before her and after her post-mortem. I cannot offer any explanation as to what prompted me to go back and review the aforementioned photos. However, one day I found myself staring at the photos and there quite clearly can be seen two

crosses clearly visible carved on each cheek of Eddowes. Could this also be the signature of Les XX, a signature left by the killer, which had been missed for 125 years? I had the photos enhanced and the two crosses are much more clearly visible and have been highlighted. (Picture 11) was taken before the post-mortem and (Picture 12) taken following the post-mortem.

It is widely known that there are many copies of photographs of Eddowes, which appear to have been taken at different times and from different angles, these and other Ripper photographs are freely available in the public domain. Over the years some Ripperologist's and researchers have "played" around with the victims photos in an attempt to make them clearer by cleaning up the photos using modern-day photographic technology.

I subsequently visited The National Archives and was given access to all the Ripper photographs on file. As far as original Ripper victims and other likely victims photographs are concerned the only ones which I would suggest are totally original and untouched are one picture of each of the victims Nichols, Chapman, and Eddowes, and two showing the Kelly crime scene. In addition I found originals of Tabram and Coles and a copy of a photograph of McKenzie which clearly states this is a copy, and also states that the original, which had originally been there had gone missing around 1980.

All of the aforementioned photographs are sepia photographs and with the exception of one of the Kelly crime scene the photographs are no more

than 4ins x 3ins. With exception of Coles and Tabram and McKenzie there is no provenance attached to these photographs. All of the others I have referred to are grouped together in a separate album. This is the album of photographs, which mysteriously appeared in 1988. An original photograph of Stride was also with the collection. However, that original is now also missing.

It is believed that the album had been in the possession of the family of a Commander Millen of the Metropolitan Police. He had apparently been using these photographs to give lectures within the police service and following his death the family ensured their safe return, coincidentally on the 100-year anniversary of the murders.

The Eddowes photo referred to from the album shows her in a standing position propped up against what appears to be a wall following the post-mortem. The photograph is very faint and is a distance shot rather than a close up but a close examination does show the crosses.

The only photograph of Stride on file was an 8ins x 4ins black and white photo, which was obviously a copy of the original... There is no back stamp and no provenance to the photograph, but it is the one which is currently in the public domain and taken from the original.

I then examined the specific file appertaining to the Eddowes murder. In this file I found four 6ins x 4ins black and white photographs of Eddowes. These are back stamped “City of London Police B Department April 24th 1968”. All are the same of which copies are freely available in the public domain.

One of the photographs shows Eddowes laying in what appears to be a coffin prior to the post-mortem again this shows what I believe to be a cross on her right cheek and a faint cross on her left cheek, (Picture 11).

Another one is her propped against the wall following the post-mortem it is a much closer shot than the sepia photograph described previous, and again shows the crosses, as does the head and shoulders photograph also taken following the post-mortem.

It should be noted that the post-mortem was not carried out till some 12 hours had elapsed from the time of the murder. In that time lividity and

rigor mortis would have set in. Lividity is where the blood sinks to the bottom of the body due to death. This would affect the visible physical structure of the body. That would mean that cuts and wounds after a long period of time would look less fierce and with the skin hardening may not be so readily visible.

We cannot say what happened to the body after the post-mortem, was it left lying in the coffin, or was it propped standing up and left for a lengthy period of time. As far as the photographs are concerned and the different ones in the public domain it may have been the case that more than one photographer was involved in taking different photographs at different times.

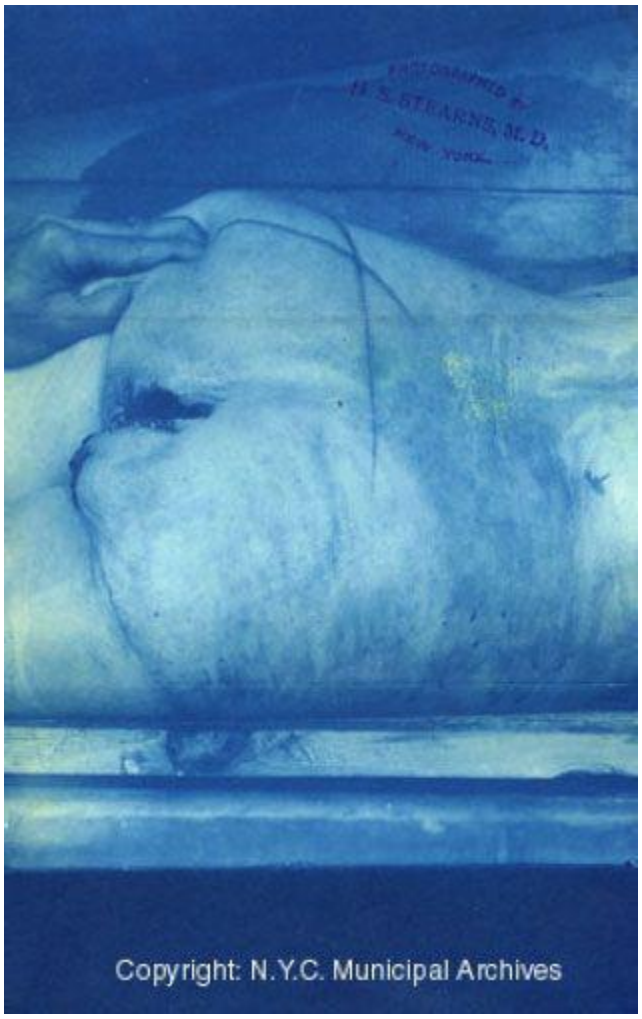
The black and white photographs of Eddowes are copies of the originals but of course I have to ask the question what happened to the originals? It would seem that they must have been in the possession of the City of London Police in 1968 for the copies to be taken but what happened to them after that? Did they get lost or thrown out? I doubt this. Were they borrowed and simply not returned by a police officer in similar circumstances to that of Commander Millen as described above, or were they simply stolen and now sit hidden away in a Ripperologist's own private collection?

It is a fact there are a number of important documents and records and photographs which have supposedly "gone missing" over the years most since the 1960s/1970s at a period in time when original documents were freely available in the archives for people to go and examine unsupervised. What happened to them? They all didn't just vanish into thin air. The answer is they were stolen and perhaps now sit in a Ripperologist's private collection never to see the light of day again, thus depriving the world of vital information which may lead to the identity of the killer or killers.

As far as other similar facial mutilations carried out on any of the other victims there appear to have been none, except for Mary Kelly, but her face was mutilated to the point she was almost unrecognizable, and of course there is a doubt about her actually being a Ripper victim. It is also documented that other alleged Ripper victims were found with cuts and lacerations to their bodies. Sadly these were never photographed so there is no way of telling if any of these cuts or lacerations were in the shape of X's.

It is quite possible that potentially there could be a direct link between the information provided by De La Ree Bott, Les XX, Whitechapel, and ultimately the Whitechapel murders. But was it just a tenuous link or something more sinister, and could I find any more direct or corroborative evidence to support the new findings?

Throughout my police service I learnt to check and recheck evidence and information when dealing with undetected crimes. This proved invaluable in the case of Eddowes in discovering the X's carved on her cheeks. It would also prove to be invaluable with regards to uncovering further evidence in the murder of Carrie Brown the prostitute who was murdered in a hotel room in New York on April 24th 1891. It has been suggested that she could also have been a Ripper victim a suggestion that I concur with having regard to my previous investigation into Carl Feigenbaum and the belief that he murdered women both in Whitechapel as well as Germany and the USA.



I then went back and re-examined the mortuary photos taken of Brown's body (Pictures 13-14) the first photo was taken with the body lying face down. On her buttocks can clearly be seen a large X which has been carved in the skin. Looking at the second photo which was taken with the body lying face up there is what I would suggest is a very small X which appears to have been carved into the abdominal area. I have blown the photo up but that doesn't make it much clearer. This X is of a similar size to the X's seen on the face of Eddowes. If it is a second X then this is clear proof, which may directly link these murders to the same killer. This new evidence may also add further weight to the belief officers had that Mary Kelly was not killed by the same hand as the other victims. As is known Kelly was murdered and her body butchered in the confines of her locked room. Carrie Brown was also murdered in the confines of a locked room giving her killer the time and the opportunity to butcher her body and remove any organs,

this did not happen. In the absence of this it is another piece of the jigsaw, which supports the theory that Feigenbaum may have committed murders in three different countries as I have suggested. It also could now suggest that the same killer was not responsible for all of the Whitechapel murders.

After assessing and evaluating the new information regarding Les XX and the Whitechapel murders, it would be wrong to totally rule out Les XX from any involvement in one, some, or all of the murders. I have to also refer to the long and expensive investigation conducted by the famous crime novelist Patricia Cornwell. She believes that Walter Sickert was involved in the Whitechapel murders. I have already documented that Sickert was closely connected to Les XX, so her beliefs may not be as wide of the mark as Ripperologist's readily suggest.

However, the fact that there now could be a direct link between Carrie Brown's murder in New York and Eddowes' in London perhaps weakens that theory. It once again opens up the Ripper mystery and yet again throws up more questions than answers.

CHAPTER TEN

THE SECRET POLICE FILES

For many years researchers have referred to missing police files, which may or may not have contained other information in relation to the Ripper investigation of 1888. There was no specific information as to what these files were or where they had been originally located, or for that matter did they ever actually exist.

Through my investigation I discovered that in fact there were still in existence unreleased Metropolitan Police records dating back to 1888. These had apparently been retained in the Metropolitan Police Special Branch archives, and due to the sensitive nature of the contents had not openly been made public. It has already been documented that at the time of the Whitechapel murders the police not only had their hands full with the Ripper investigation but had major investigations ongoing at that time into the activities of Fenian terrorists and other anarchists who were operating in London at this time, all seeking to disrupt the forces of law and order. In this current context the term anarchist is defined as:

"One who occupies himself with the means of giving effect by physical force, if need be, to some such theory as mentioned above, and includes the plotting against the lives of Crowned Heads, Heads of States, or other highly-placed persons, and advocating their assassination."

Special Branch was first formed in January 1888 and Chief Inspector John Littlechild was head of a team of specially selected officers. In 1913 Littlechild suggested that a suspect for the Whitechapel murders could have in fact been the American quack, Doctor Francis Tumblety. Ripper researchers in recent years have suggested Tumblety was under surveillance by Special Branch in relation to his possible involvement with the Fenians at that time.

I was intrigued to find out what these police records were and what they may contain. Enquiries with the Metropolitan Police revealed that in fact the records in question were in fact ledgers and a register, which contained

direct references to specific files relative to each entry. They are documented as follows:

Chief constables CID Register "Special Branch" (1888-1892)

Metropolitan Police Ledgers "Special Account" Vol 1-3 (1888-1912)

The next step was to try to gain access to these ledgers and the register. Enquiries revealed that they were in fact still held in the Special Branch archives at New Scotland Yard. I made various Freedom of Information requests to access them, but I was informed that access to them had now been closed pending a Freedom of Information Act appeal, which had been lodged back in 2007 by Alex Butterworth a historical researcher who was conducting research into the early years of Special Branch. I was informed that this appeal hearing was due to take place in February 2009.

In the interim period I also ascertained that in fact these ledgers and register had been freely available to bona fide researchers and historians for viewing up until 2008, and in fact some historians and researchers not connected to the Ripper investigation had previously examined them and in one case prior to the new restrictions being imposed one such historical researcher Dr. Lindsay Clutterbuck, a former Metropolitan Special Branch officer had in fact published in 2002 a 450 page thesis, which contained detailed information and extracts from the register and the ledgers. His thesis was titled, "*An accident in history? The evolution of counter terrorism methodology, in the Metropolitan Police from 1829 to 1901"*.

More recently the Metropolitan Police had refused open and unrestricted access, and formulated an undertaking in relation to these ledgers whereby any researcher wanting to examine the documents had been required to sign this undertaking stating that they would not publish or disclose the contents of either the register or the ledgers. Although not having access to these ledgers and the register at this time my enquiries revealed that in fact as previously stated that they were not specific files. The special account ledger apparently showed entries involving outgoing expenditure including payments made to informants who had been used by Metropolitan Police Special Branch officers throughout the various years which they refer to.

Clutterbuck states that the chief constable's register was made up of alphabetical entries relating to information given by informants and also

general information fed into the system by police officers. All of the entries related to specific files on each topic and had file reference numbers. All the information gathered had been systematically collated, categorized and then stored in box files for future reference.

However, according to Special Branch the specific files referred to had apparently not been retained and destroyed. The police of course do have the option of destroying any files they think fit in the interests of national security, either due to the passage of time, or following the conclusion of a particular case to protect the identity of an informant. Sadly all that was apparently left were the ledgers and the register. The question was did they contain any new information regarding Jack the Ripper and the Whitechapel murders?

I was also curious to find out why these files having been originally opened to the bona fide researchers had suddenly been closed and was now the subject of a Freedom of Information appeal. The answer soon became apparent.

A researcher by the name of Felicity Lowde who had an interest in the Whitechapel murders had been allowed to view the register and ledgers in 2005 but despite signing the undertaking she had apparently photographed some of the pages from these ledgers and the register, which she then published on her own blog on the Internet along with other information from these documents.

It was then suggested that the police took action against Ms. Lowde by seizing her computer’s hard drive and taking action to seek an injunction order against her in the High Court. Further enquiries however revealed that in fact this seizure was in connection with an unrelated criminal matter. The said information and photos and photos of extracts from both sets of records are still to this day visible on her web blog. I will discuss them in more detail in due course.

As these ledgers and the register contained details of informants the Metropolitan Police were concerned that some of these named informants may still have living relatives and it was important for their details to be kept secret and for any living relatives to be offered protection despite the passage of time. The practice of protecting the identity of informants is still

the case even today, although it should be said that even from my time as a serving detective officer most informants were referred to either by nicknames or by simply using false names.

In the fight against crime and terrorism informants are a valuable asset to a detective officer more so than ever in the early days before modern technology was an aid to criminal detection. It should also be noted that informants are usually only paid on information they provide and that information must be of a positive nature However, there are certain circumstances where there are exceptions to that rule which I will expand upon later.

The issue of revealing the identities of informants was the main reason for the files being suddenly closed in 2007, and the subsequent reason for Alex Butterworth to lodge and appeal following his initial request to view the ledgers and register and to be able to freely print and publish information gathered from them. He was given the opportunity of also signing a written undertaking the same as Felicity Lowde but refused. In the light of the fact Felicity Lowde signed it and reneged on it and it appears no further action being taken I suspect Mr. Butterworth now wishes perhaps he had done what she did.

Ms. Lowde's assessment and evaluation of some of the information contained within these records is interesting. She has obviously carried out research into the Whitechapel murders. She is one of a number of Ripper researchers who subscribe to the Royal Conspiracy theory. She suggests that Ripper victim Catherine Eddowes and her common law husband John Kelly were acting as spies/informants for Special Branch working directly under Chief Inspector John Littlechild. She suggests Eddowes was actively seeking information from members of the International Workers Club in Berner Street.

In support of her theory, Ms. Lowde refers to two specific undated entries in the register. These entries relate to a John Kelly and Catherine Kelly as shown in (Picture 16), which is the unredacted page from the register which she photographed and published and refers to. It is accepted that Eddowes also used the name Catherine Kelly with a nickname of "Kitty" and she was in a relationship with John Kelly. Ms. Lowde states that two Kelly entries recorded in the register relate to Eddowes and John Kelly who she suggests

were members of the Jenkinson spy ring. The Jenkinson referred to is Edward Jenkinson a government civil servant who ran a network of spies for the British Secret Service up until 1887/88 before going back to his previous post as assistant under secretary for police and crime based at Dublin Castle.

On examining the relevant page from the ledger, which she published and is still today shown on her web blog, it is clearly not the case. The register entry does not corroborate what she suggests. Furthermore, she states that the entry relating to John Kelly shows him receiving a file directly from Jenkinson on the Fenian assassination of a man named McDoughty. My interpretation of this is completely the opposite. It is normal practice that when murders occur witnesses are seen and interviewed and any statements that they make in relation to that enquiry are documented before being filed. This to me is clearly a case of a statement that Kelly has made in connection with this murder and has subsequently been documented and later filed.

As far as the entry relating to John Kelly is concerned, she states that it shows him receiving a file from Jenkinson. However, again reading the entry this is clearly not the case. The entry clearly relates to one of a number of files the Metropolitan Police received from Jenkinson who was asked to hand over his files to the newly formed Special Branch before he left his post in 1887.

There are other entries in the register, which confirm my belief. In staying with the John Kelly entry a further examination of newly found police records reveals a John Kelly aka John Moran who was an informant working for both the British and Irish Governments in 1886. He was relocated to Canada and subsequently received yearly payment from the British Government after being relocated these are recorded up as far as 1887 so I would suggest the John Kelly shown in the register are one and the same and not the common law partner of Catherine Eddowes as suggested by Lowde’s. This negates her theory that both were working as spies for Special Branch.

With regards to Ms. Lowde’s theory, she even goes so far as to say that Chief Inspector Littlechild was actually responsible for Eddowes murder and also ordered the murder of Mary Kelly, as both were planning to reveal

details involving the indiscretion of Prince Albert Edward Victor and his alleged association with Mary Kelly which resulted in her allegedly giving birth to a love child who was subsequently spirited away by Special Branch officers. This version differs from the other version where Annie Crook is named as having given birth to a royal love child of Prince Albert Victor.

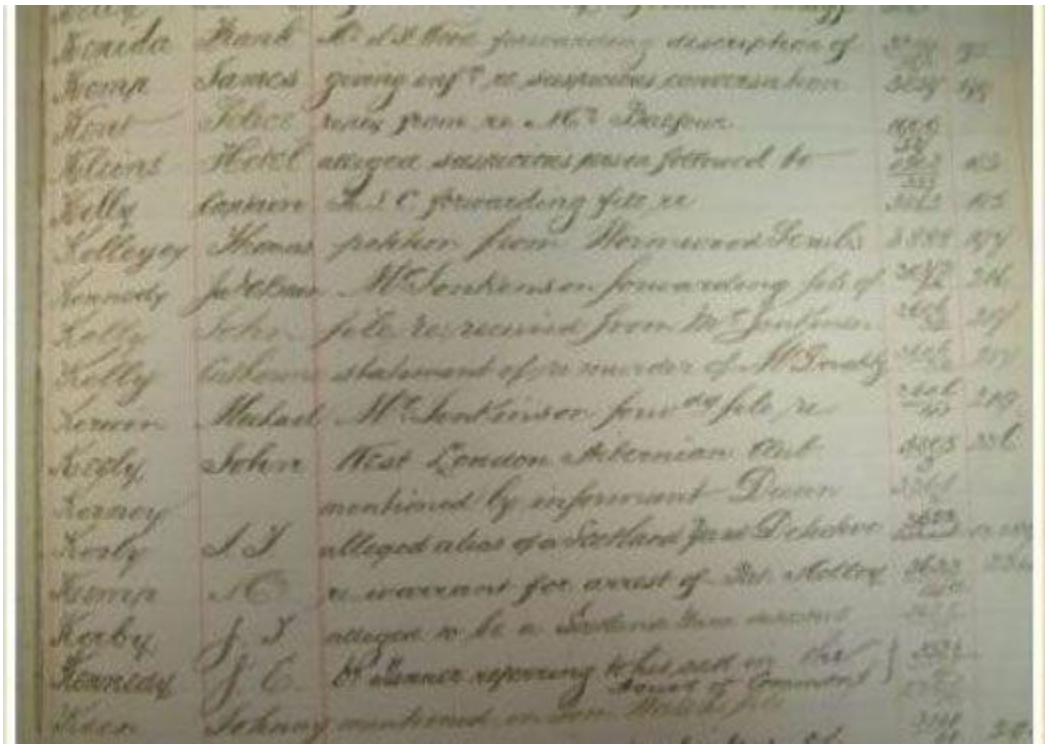
I cannot accept what Ms. Lowde is suggesting in relation to the entries. It is a fact that all the entries are undated. It is now clear that all of the entries in the register were entered retrospectively en masse after 1894, and although the entries in the register relate to files formulated from February 1888, there is clear evidence to show that earlier files predating February 1888 were also entered in the ledgers. The entries referred to by Ms. Lowde and other entries on that same page are proof of that.

With regards to the entry regarding the McDoughty murder I have closely examined this entry and the entry could in fact refer to a “Mr. Doughty” and not “McDoughty”. The person who made all of the entries has made such a small entry prefixing the surname it could be either. In any event I could find no specific references or details of any murders in either name. I did find an entry in The Guardian newspaper dated November 23rd 1887. Part of the article related to a Henry Doughty and having regard to the date and the fact that the entry in the register could have related to that same time period they could be one and the same. The entry in the ledger refers to a specific murder however, it could be the case that it was a plot to murder which never came to fruition; the article shows Henry Doughty as an Irish activist and he without a doubt would have come to the notice of police. The extract reads:

“Mr. Henry Doughty, who calls himself the London workingmen's delegate to Ireland, was on Friday last sentenced to a month's imprisonment for inciting people to adopt the Plan of Campaign and to join the League in a proclaimed district. Mr. Doughty on hearing the sentence rose, and, waving his hat in the air, shouted “God save Ireland." The cry was taken up by the people in court, a number of soldiers belonging to the Leinster regiment being especially demonstrative. The magistrate immediately sentenced a countryman who was arrested in the act of observing for O'Brien to a week's imprisonment, and the tumult subsided. Mr. Doughty was subsequently removed to the gaol at Limerick, care being taken to prevent anything like a disturbance on the way.”

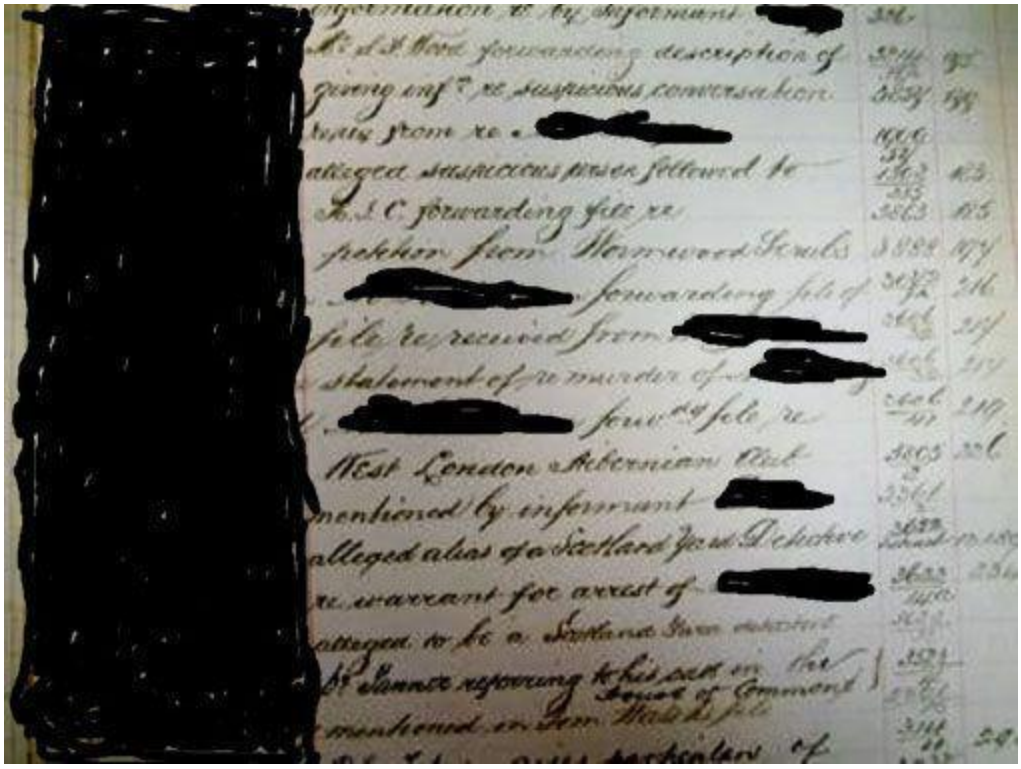
In February 2009 Alex Butterworth's Freedom of Information appeal was heard. It should be noted that despite lodging the appeal Alex Butterworth was not notified of the date of the hearing, nor was he given the opportunity to attend and to add more weight to the appeal or call any witnesses in support of his appeal, turning the appeal hearing into a one-sided affair.

During the appeal the Metropolitan Police went to great lengths to emphasize to the appeal tribunal the importance of not disclosing the identity of informants. In fact they went so far as to say that it was not possible to distinguish in the ledgers and register as to what information related to informants and what did not. This without a doubt was a misleading statement, which in my opinion had a major impact on the tribunal's final decision.



Due to the overwhelming police evidence much of which was heard in closed session the information commissioners conceded defeat and a compromise was made between the Metropolitan Police and the Freedom of Information Commissioner, both agreeing that the ledgers and register could be made public subject to all proper names being redacted out. This made the ledgers and register nothing more than a black mass of the redactors pen. To show this more clearly the same unredacted page

previously referred to in (Picture 15) is now shown following the redacting process in (Picture 16).



Following this decision I went to inspect copies of the register and the ledgers. It became clear that despite all the redaction it would have been a relatively easy task for someone like me or in fact any other experienced police officer to go through the register and ledgers and be able to distinguish which entries related directly to information given by named informants and that which did not.

Even in redacted form it soon became apparent that the register was an early form of collators record used to collate information submitted by police officers. When I joined the police service in 1970 we operated collators systems. This was in the form of a card index system. Information was manually entered on index cards by officers working in the collator's office.

This was information submitted to the office by officers on the beat etc. It would include general information about crime and criminals, motors vehicles connected to suspects etc. The information would have been either gathered by officers themselves or could have been passed on to them by

informants or members of the public. It should be said that it was not always accurate and reliable and in some cases may have been as a result of malicious intent by the provider.

On further examining the register not only had the names of informants been edited out but all others names, which are clearly not informants had also been edited out. The first thing that struck me was that despite all the editing out of these ledgers it could be seen that they contained a wealth of information. I would have to say these ledgers and register are some of the most informative and interesting vintage police documents I have come across, and to think these ledgers were offered to The National Archives and they declined to take them stating they contained no useful information.

After going through the register in redacted form I did find four interesting undated entries regarding Jack the Ripper and the Whitechapel murders.

The first entry was under a specific entry titled Jack the Ripper, the entry read, "*The name given to suspect -------- at Bushmills"* followed by a file reference number obviously the name has been redacted out. The missing file would have contained the relevant information as to why that person had been considered to be a suspect.

The second entry found was an entry from Chief Inspector Littlechild, which read, "*Suspect --------- & The Whitechapel Murders"* followed by file reference number. Again the name has been redacted out, and again the relevant now missing file would have contained an entry as to what the information was to make Littlechild submit the information to be recorded.

The third entry read, "McGrath, William – "*said to be connected to Whitechapel murders""*

The fourth entry read, "McGrath, William – "*suspicious Irishman at 57 Bedford Gardens""*

In addition at the back of the register were references made to anonymous letters received by Special Branch regarding the Whitechapel murders. I would have imagined that perhaps the contents of these may have been entered under separate register entries and may have even been the specific entries referred to above.

The names, which are shown in the four specific entries, could have been the names of Ripper suspects already known. Or they could just be names suggested by informants or names simply given to the police, which warranted further investigation. If they were to reveal names of new suspects the Ripper mystery would be thrown wide open yet again. There may of course have been other vital information regarding Jack the Ripper and the Whitechapel murders in the ledgers and the register, but due to the heavy redacting I found it almost impossible to assess and evaluate all the entries fully.

Undeterred by this I then submitted a number of additional specific requests to the Metropolitan Police under the Freedom of Information Act to access the ledgers and register in unredacted form. These requests were centred around the four entries from the register and any other entries relating to the Whitechapel murders and Jack the Ripper, which may be contained in them but due to the heavy redaction were not readily visible. At the time I emphasized to the police that I had no interest in informants or disclosing the names of informants. Despite all of this the Metropolitan Police again rejected all of my requests.

The police were using the Butterworth appeal decision for their basis of the constant refusals. I then lodged an appeal with the Metropolitan Police on all their decisions to refuse access. This is an appeal conducted internally by the police, needless to say as expected, was also unsuccessful. This is a ridiculous part of the Freedom of Information process whereby the police review a decision made by them via a different department.

In the interim period I obtained a copy of the thesis written by Lindsay Clutterbuck, which I studied and read meticulously. In Clutterbuck's thesis he clearly states he had been given special permission to access the ledgers and register. He states he decided to use and publish the names of the informants as they were recorded in the primary documents, however he accepts that these names may or may not have been totally accurate, having regard to the fact that informants do not always use their correct names and equally police officers also refer to their informants by secondary names or nicknames.

Clutterbuck at the time he wrote his thesis was a serving Special Branch officer of the rank of Detective Chief Inspector working in the Specialist

Operations Department at New Scotland Yard where he undertook a variety of roles relating to counterterrorism. For three years he was head of the MPS unit responsible for national and London-wide counterterrorism policy and strategy. He without a doubt would have known about the Metropolitan Police policy on informants. He obviously thought it did not apply to informants going back 125 years. Nor would it seem his superiors who obviously gave him permission to examine and then extract and publish many extracts and details of informants.

However, in any event all the informants and other names contained in the ledgers have been dead for many years and on looking at the long periods that a large number of them spent working for the Metropolitan Police Special Branch, Clutterbuck believes it is quite possible that any belated recognition of their services may well have met with their approval. In the thesis he describes the ledgers as follows:

Special account box volumes of 1 to 3

There are three special account books each measuring 160 millimetres by 200 millimetres and printed into five columns per page. They detail, amongst other items what appears to be the cash amounts paid out to individual informants. In all, approximately 6000 individual entries span a total of the 24 years from 1888 to 1912.

Book one which is headed "special" *account and runs from February 1, 1888 to December 5, 1894.*

Book two, with no heading commences on December 12, 1894 and finishes on December 25, 1901.

Book three again with no heading covers the years from January 1, 1902 to March 27, 1912.

The Chief Constable's register is a bound ledger measuring 27 centimetres by 38 centimetres by six centimetres weighing 4 kg. The front cover is embossed with the words "crime department – special branch" *and the first page bears the stamp* "criminal investigation department –chief constable's office – SPECIAL" *with the handwritten date of 20.4.88 inserted into its centre. It appears to serve at several functions and each page is divided into four columns, each headed respectively;*

NAME

SUBJECT

REFERENCE TO CORRESPONDENCE FOLIO

REFERENCE TO CORRESPONDENCE IN REGISTER

At the rear of the book, two pages detail anonymous letters sent to the special branch. A further six pages contain references to extract from the press, ranging from the radical to the establishment, from within Great Britain and abroad. However, it is the remainder of the book that contains the most significant research material in relation to the Victorian special branch and also the Whitechapel murders.

It is organized into alphabetical cuts, with each letter further divided into sub cuts headed A, E, I, O, U. At 35 lines a page there is a minimum of 1000 entries per letter of the alphabet, plus "Mc" and the use of the spare capacity at the back for overflow. Very few pages are not filled completely, giving a total of up to 30,000, one line entries.

A number in the "reference to correspondence" *column always in the format of a fraction e.g. 3622/2 accompanies each one line entry. Another number, usually between one and 400 e.g. 294 appears in the* "Folio in correspondence register" *column.*

Overall the ledger appears to have been designed to operate on three levels.

As a register for correspondence and information sent to special branch by the rest of the Metropolitan Police and other police forces plus the home office other government departments, and members of the public. In addition to requests for information and documents not only from provincial police forces in England, but also from The USA, South Africa and Australia.

As an index to the reports submitted by its own officers.

As a nominal and subject index of people and topics mentioned as in 1 and 2 above.

The ledger also gives an insight as to how Special Branch set up their ports screening system enabling them to identify Irishmen and Irish Americans entering the UK. Special Branch also took a great interest in screening and interrogating cattlemen who arrived on cattle boats. From entries in the ledger it would seem suspect Irishmen would attempt to enter the UK on these boats.

In his thesis Clutterbuck makes reference to two entries in the ledger relating to the Whitechapel murders and Jack the Ripper. One is a named person suspected of being Jack the Ripper. I was unable to confirm as to whether these are the same two entries I have previously referred to...

Although Clutterbuck's thesis is formulated around the workings of Special Branch he does pass comments in relation to certain police officers who have previously been mentioned in connection with the Whitechapel murders, these being Inspector Abberline, Chief Inspector Littlechild, Sir Robert Anderson, and James Monro all of whom in later years all suggested they knew the identity of Jack the Ripper in their respective memoirs or letters, or interviews with the press.

Clutterbuck specifically mentions Monro and refers to a sentence in a memorandum from the Home Secretary Henry Matthews sent in 1888 to his Private Secretary Evelyn Ruggles-Brise that read: "*Stimulate the Police about the Whitechapel murders. Monro might be willing to give a hint to the CID people if necessary."* This memo seemed to suggest that Monro at the time knew more about the possible identity of Jack the Ripper than his role as "*secret agent"* for the home office allowed him to reveal to the detectives investigating the murders. Clutterbuck states in his thesis that the Chief Constable's register contains several intriguing references to at least support the contention that "*special"* had more than a passing interest in Jack the Ripper, but none to corroborate Francis Tumblety the new contemporary suspect that Stewart Evans and Paul Gainey had put forward in their book "*The Lodger"* (1995). Conversely he states that their conclusion (Evans and Gainey) that "*Ripperologist's"* could no longer rely upon the writings of Sir Robert Anderson as accurate tends to echo in the comments of Superintendent Mallon of the Dublin Metropolitan Police some years previously (Bussey.1910). Anderson stated in his book published in 1910 that he knew the identity of the Ripper, believing him to have been a Polish Jew, but never naming him.

One might well ask if Monro did have his own theory about the Ripper murders. He was involved in the investigation in 1889 of the murder of Alice McKenzie as Robert Anderson was on leave at the time, in relation to that murder Monro is quoted as saying, *"I need not say that every effort will be made by the police to discover the murderer, who, I am inclined to believe, is identical with the notorious Jack the Ripper of last year."* By this statement he obviously has a firm belief that she was a Ripper victim. If that is the case, I would suggest this adds even more weight in ruling out Francis Tumblety as being the Ripper as it is fact that he was not in the country at the time of this murder.

As far as Monro is concerned, it could have been not so much a matter of discretion on his part as a case of ignorance. We do know he had a theory because in 1890 he told Cassell's Magazine he had "*decidedly"* formed a theory and stated, "*When I do theorise it is from a practical standpoint and not upon any visionary foundation."* His grandson Christopher remembers him saying, "Jack the Ripper should have been caught".

The truth is that Monro never published his memoirs and in fact no one knew he had written any until they were discovered in a back room in a house in Edinburgh in 1983, unseen by anyone outside his family. The memoirs contained detailed references to a number of notable cases he had been involved in. They make no mention of the Ripper case. So if Monro did know anything more than his own personal theory as to the identity of Jack the Ripper he took it to his grave. I personally do not believe he did.

I would thoroughly recommend Clutterbuck's thesis for those interested in how Special Branch was formed and how it operated from its conception in 1888 to the present day. I was amazed as to exactly how much information from the ledgers and the register Clutterbuck had published. In fact out of 439 pages of his thesis 117 bear reference to specific entries in the aforementioned ledgers and register.

Clutterbuck even gives examples of informants including their names and what officers they had worked for, and how much they had been paid. I was taken aback by all of this. The Special Branch in the Butterworth appeal case had only chosen to exhibit 20 pages from the ledgers and had stated that there was nothing sensitive contained in those pages. This is clearly not

the case and goes to support my belief that the Butterworth appeal tribunal was misled by evidence given by the police.

The publishing of this material in Clutterbuck's thesis clearly contradicts their argument that the identity of informants should be protected at all times. The police knew about this thesis and its contents and if they were that concerned they could and should have taken steps through the legal system to have the thesis withdrawn or even edited by Clutterbuck. The same should apply to the material Felicity Lowde published, which is at the time of writing still shown on her website blog.

Having viewed the aforementioned register in redacted form there is one entry made by Littlechild, which as previously stated sets out the name of a suspect for Jack the Ripper. Should my appeal to have this information be made public be successful then it will be of great interest to see if Tumblety is one of the names mentioned.

Whilst on the subject of police officers naming suspects years later, I refer to likely suspect George Chapman aka Severin Klosowski. It wasn't until after the arrest of Chapman in 1903 that Chief Inspector Abberline voiced his opinion on Chapman as being a likely suspect for Jack the Ripper. By that time fifteen years had passed since the last "Ripper" killing and the killer still had not been caught.

Abberline was no doubt still in close contact with other senior officers at Scotland Yard. If he felt so strongly about Chapman being the Ripper then while Chapman was awaiting execution why were arrangements not made for Chapman to be visited and questioned about the Whitechapel murders? This is basic standard police practice and still is the case today. After all, following the arrest and conviction of William Bury another person put forward as a likely Ripper suspect who was arrested in 1889 in Dundee for murdering his wife. Abberline went to Dundee to interview him, so this highlights Abberline's awareness of visiting and interviewing condemned murderers.

In contradiction of all of the above, police officers who in later years made public their opinions as to whom Jack the Ripper was, Major Henry Smith who was acting commissioner for the City of London police in 1888 who investigated the murder of Eddowes, published his autobiography in

1910 titled, "*From Constable to Commissioner"* in that book he clearly states that the police did not have any knowledge as to the identity of the Jack the Ripper.

I did however uncover another interesting article on the Ripper murders published in the Police Review magazine in 1913. The article was an interview with another retired senior police officer Chief Inspector Henry Moore who was directly involved in investigating the murders. The relevant quote from that interview relating to the Ripper investigation is, "*Well so far as I could make out he was a mad foreign sailor, who paid periodical visits to London on board ship. He committed the crimes and then went back to his ship, and remembered nothing about them."* He does not elaborate on how he came to form that opinion but it certainly does add much corroboration to the Feigenbaum theory.

In addition to all the work I conducted into the register and ledgers I also found out that there were still in existence a large quantity of letters sent between Henry Matthews who was home secretary at the time and Prime Minister Lord Salisbury.

These letters are held in the private collection of the current Lord Salisbury in the archives at Hatfield House the family home of Lord Salisbury. I made an initial request to view them but this was refused. The reason given was the fact that they are private letters and not for public viewing.

The chief archivist at Hatfield House is Robin Harcourt Williams who had been most helpful in the early stages of my investigation. Eventually we struck a compromise. Robin agreed to read the letters and would inform me if there was any relevant information on the Ripper or any Ripper connection to the Fenians. He read the letters and told me they contained no mention of anything connected to the Ripper or the suggestion of any Fenian involvement. I have to take Robin on trust and as he has been helpful in the past I have no reason to suggest that he has been untruthful in his reply. It does go to show that there are still documents in existence from 1888, which have not seen the light of day. I wonder what others there are, who has them, and what they may reveal should they ever be discovered and made public.

CHAPTER ELEVEN

FREEDOM OF INFORMATION TRIBUNAL HEARING PART 1

I subsequently lodged an appeal with the information commissioners against the decisions made by the police to refuse me access to the ledgers and the register. That appeal was lodged in June 2010. I provided the commissioners with new documents and evidence to support the appeal, which was based on the public interest factor and the failure of the commissioners to notify Butterworth of the previous tribunal hearing, with a request that the tribunal's decision in that case be set aside.

On November 1st 2010 I received a decision notice from the information commissioners. This notice upheld all the decisions made by the police previous. Again the Butterworth decision was cited for the commissioners refusing my appeal and disregarded all the other issues I had raised.

In an attempt to undermine my appeal process the Metropolitan Police stated they were prepared to release to me the unredacted details of the specific entries in the register relating to Jack the Ripper and the Whitechapel murders which I had previously identified. Needless to say I accepted their offer but it was still my intention to pursue my appeal to gain full and unrestricted access to the register and the ledgers.

The next part of the appeals process was with the Information Appeals Tribunal. I then lodged a further appeal against the information commissioner's decision notice with them. I requested a full appeal hearing before a judge. I felt that I could justifiably put forward many reasons and produce sufficient evidence to show why I should be granted the right to appeal and subsequently be granted a full tribunal hearing in an attempt to overturn the decisions made by both the police and the information commissioners.

So the die had been cast it was now all or nothing and it wasn't very long before I would see exactly what a monumental task I faced. The first setback was the tribunal appeal judge having read my appeal notice against the decision made by the information commissioners asked the

Metropolitan Police if they wanted to be joined in this appeal to which they stated they readily accepted the invitation.

The information commissioners responded to my appeal notice in which they set out the reasons why my appeal should not even be heard. They made an application for my appeal to be struck out at that early stage of the proceedings, their application was as follows and also endorsed by the solicitor representing the police:

"The Commissioner submits that there are no grounds to overturn the Decision Notice and he invites the Tribunal to dismiss this appeal. Further, the Commissioner contends that this appeal possesses no realistic prospects of succeeding and he invites the Tribunal to strike out this appeal."

I responded with the following:

"The public interest is an important factor in my request for access to the documents. I should therefore be afforded the opportunity to present what I believe to be overwhelming evidence in support of this. None of which was before the previous tribunal.

"I would also suggest that there are many grounds for the original decision to be overturned. These have been documented in my appeal notice. In addition I will be producing new evidence, which will not only corroborate these grounds, but will introduce new issues surrounding them.

"For the commissioner to say my appeal has no realistic chance of succeeding is very presumptuous after all at this time he nor the additional party (police) will be aware of the total strength of the evidence I have in support of my appeal. I would suggest that perhaps the commissioner should at least wait until he views the evidence in its totality. It then may be the case that he and the additional party may wish to withdraw their objections to my appeal, and offer a compromise. In view of the aforementioned matters discussed and my comments I would respectfully ask the judge to dismiss the commissioner's objections outright."

The tribunal judge having reviewed the submissions from both myself and the information commissioners and the police issued a ruling in my favour that ruling being:

"I have read the Notice of Appeal and accompanying papers, the IC's response, Mr Marriott's reply dated 14th December 2010 and the decision in the First Appeal and have decided not to grant the application.

"I am not bound by the decision of another Tribunal, in contrast to the IC who may be obliged to follow the decision of a Tribunal. Considering all the information before me I have decided that the appeal should be heard and I do not accept that it has no reasonable prospect of succeeding. In coming to this decision I note that the Tribunal in the First Appeal and the IC's decisions and response appear to have applied a qualified exemption as if it is absolute."

The next stage in this long and complicated process would be a directions hearing. This would be the first test as both the Metropolitan Police and the Information commissioners would be represented by barristers. I decided not to engage legal representation as I felt my knowledge of all the facts surrounding these issues would be easier for me to present to the tribunal first-hand than to bring in a fresh face who I would have to brief thoroughly. Furthermore, there was also the cost of paying for legal representation, which would be far beyond my means.

I then set about preparing the appeal in full. I was fortunate to have the valuable assistance of two highly experienced Ripper researchers, Simon Wood based in California and Phillip Carter based in Norway and an expert archive researcher Sarah Minney. The first step was to try to obtain evidence to negate the main issues I felt the other parties would seek to rely on. These revolved around the issues of informants, which I have previously mentioned.

The first issue related to the police stating that it was their responsibility to protect the identity of informants above and beyond their lifetime. I was prepared to concede part of this, which mentions the need to protect the identity of informants. However, it is a fact that the names of alleged informants contained within the ledgers and register are made up of surnames and pseudonyms going back 125 years thereby in my opinion making it almost impossible to positively identify them in any event.

In Clutterbuck's thesis he goes to great lengths to detail the number of informants used by Special Branch during the lifespan of the register and

documents 1888-1894 these total 85 of which only 13 are shown in 1888. However, it should be noted that some of the same informants were used by Special Branch over many years so the total figure shown does not represent the number of actual informants. This is a drop in the ocean considering the 36,000 entries which make up the ledgers and the register.

No matter what assurances the police give and what they may tell us they cannot fully guarantee that at some time in the present or in the future the details of an informant will not be disclosed. If that does happen then some harm may fall upon the informant as a result.

Examples where the details of an informant could be disclosed are firstly with regards to the Freedom of Information Act, which in some cases names could be made public, as would be the case in my appeal. There have been instances in the past in criminal trials where judges can order the police to disclose details of an informant. The police would now say that they would rather abandon a prosecution than risk the identity of an informant being disclosed. I think this view would be judged on a case-by-case basis.

In these two examples the police would suggest that the revealing of their details could result in harm falling upon the informant. I fully accept that, however there is another concern that the police would be aware of, as would be the informant, which the police would have no control over.

That concern would be if the person or persons subject to the information given by the informant were to find out via their own means and methods, then harm may still fall upon the informant. This is a common occurrence and there is nothing the police can do to prevent that other than to suggest to the informant that they go into hiding or move to a new location. In some extreme cases the police are in a position to offer the informant a new identity and a new life in another country.

Good old-fashioned investigative work would soon prove fruitful. Sarah Minney found in The National Archives in Kew a Commonwealth Office document number CO 904/183. This was titled “*Royal Irish Constabulary Register of Informants”* and covers the time period 1883-1889. At that time the Royal Irish Constabulary (RIC) came under the jurisdiction of the British Government.

The register is exactly what it says it is a register of informants used at the time. There were 106 names in the register covering a period 1887-1891, some of which, as in the Special Branch ledgers, show that they are reoccurring. Nevertheless that equates to 21 being used per year as against three being used per year from the Special Branch registers and ledgers. None of the entries had been redacted.

Some of the names are obviously proper names whereas others are clearly pseudonyms, or simply surnames. The register in some cases clearly outlines the specific information given by particular informants and how much they were paid.

I have to ask why if such a document as this is freely available in the public domain, why the Special Branch register and ledgers are also not similarly available?

Could any of those informants from the RIC register be identified after all these years given the passage of time? I would imagine that the policy of the Royal Irish Constabulary was the same as the Special Branch policy. Whoever has examined this register before sending it to the archives has obviously applied an unwritten but accepted 100-year rule for public disclosure.

Sarah Minney was still scouring The National Archives for further evidence, which soon came to light in the form of another important British government file relating to informants. This was a Home Office file numbered HO317/00038 and titled "*Activities of named paid informants against Irish Secret Societies 1892-1910*". This is a 76-page document made up of letters and correspondence between the Prime Minister Lord Salisbury, and other senior government officials and high-ranking British intelligence officers of the day. This file is also in unredacted form save for the odd named redaction, which does not affect the overall content and reading of the whole file.

This file contains the names of without question a number of the highest profile informers working for the British government during the years stated in relation to the Fenian conflict and in particular the Phoenix Park murders namely Theo Farrell and a man named Fenning aka William

Lammie. Also mentioned in this file are references to Patrick Tynan who it is alleged masterminded the Phoenix Park murders in Dublin in 1883.

At some time in the past this file was classified but again it seems that due to the passage of time it is no longer classed as such. In this file there are letters from an informant Theo Farrell to various senior figures who in turn forwarded them to even more senior officials. Farrell, although a high profile informant, in later years fell upon hard times and can be seen to be almost begging the government for money to support his family. His name and address clearly appear on those letters.

Both of the aforementioned documents contain much more detailed information about informants than the Special Branch register and ledgers. They have also been freely available for some considerable time. Whoever has deemed them suitable to go to the archives has obviously also worked on the unwritten 100-year disclosure rule.

Whilst scouring the archives I came across another interesting Home Office file numbered HO 144/221A49301G. This related to the payment of additional expenses to police officers drafted into Whitechapel at the time of the murders. It has been long suggested that a short time after the Mary Kelly murder in November 1888 the police operation in Whitechapel was wound down. Some researchers suggest that it was because the police knew the identity of the killer and that fact that he could not kill again. This could relate to the Druitt theory, or perhaps Tumblety fleeing the country, or Kosminski being caged in a lunatic asylum.

The truth is that this file shows that the police who were drafted into Whitechapel were kept on at great additional expense long after the Mary Kelly murder. In fact they were not wound down for some considerable time even after the Kelly murder.

In July 1889 in Whitechapel there was still a compliment of three sergeants and thirty-nine constables from other divisions outside Whitechapel, that decreased slightly in January 1890 to three sergeants and twenty-six constables and in March 1890 it was reduced even more to two sergeants and eleven constables which may indicate that they suspected the murder of Alice McKenzie in July 1889 as being the work of the Ripper.

This same file contains memos from many senior officers regarding the concerns over the cost of this extra manpower. Clearly this shows that up until then the police did not have any clue as to the identity of Jack the Ripper or any other killer or killers. So that must now rule Druitt, Tumblety and Ostrog out totally, as well as weakening the case against Kosminski even more because had Kosminski been the killer as suggested by Anderson and Swanson in later years then what explanation can there be for all the extra money which was spent on having police patrols in Whitechapel up until and well after March 1890.

It raises another question, if Macnaghten, Anderson and Swanson all knew and believed Kosminski were the killer then why was James Sadler suspected of being Jack the Ripper in 1891 following the murder of Frances Coles in Ripper-like fashion? Swanson was personally involved in this case. Then there is Thomas Cutbush in 1891 and William Grant Grainger in 1895, the latter inflicted abdominal wounds to a prostitute who actually survived. Both were suspected by police at the time as being the Ripper.

All of these new facts now cast an even more serious doubt about the Macnaghten memorandum and who requested it, and did it ever reach the person or persons it was intended for? In 1894 was this memorandum prepared with a view to covering up something more sinister as far as the Whitechapel murders were concerned? It should be noted that there is almost no reference to the name Jack the Ripper in any police record or document. The killer was always referred to as "*The Whitechapel Murderer*". Another strange fact is that all through this autumn of terror and beyond, there was only ever one question tabled in the House of Commons regarding the Whitechapel murders. Bearing in mind the fear and terror these murders were causing amongst the public I would have expected many questions to have been asked of not only the prime minister but also the Home Secretary.

If one looks closely at the names in the memorandum there is something about them all that stands out, that is where they all were in 1894 when Macnaghten wrote his memorandum. We know Montague Druitt was dead so mentioning his name would have no repercussions. Cutbush was in a lunatic asylum and Ostrog was on remand in prison awaiting trial for an offence of theft to which he was later convicted and sentenced to five years in prison. That being said none of them would have been in a position to

answer their accuser should the details from the memorandum have ever been made public. Furthermore, Macnaghten should have known that Ostrog was in prison in France at the time because a letter to the Home Office later confirmed that he had in fact been in prison in France at the time of the Whitechapel murders.

Further appeal research also uncovered a wealth of additional material which I felt would add even more weight to the appeal, some this came courtesy of the CIA and related to details and names of informants used by the Russian Secret Service during the same time period to which the ledgers and register referred to.

The name of the Russian Secret Service was called the Okhrana and during the period of time we are specifically concerned with they had offices and a major spy network, which was run from Paris. In 1919 the Americans seized all the Russian files and shipped them back to the USA where they remained unopened until 1957. It was then they were opened, translated and some of the information made public. Amongst this information made public were the unredacted names and details of informants both male and female used by the Okhrana in Europe. All of this was published in the form of a dissertation written by a female who was referred to as Rita T. Kronenbitter, which was obviously a pseudonym. This dissertation is freely available to download from the CIA website. Also contained in these records were the names of two retired Scotland Yard detectives named as Michael Thorpe and Francis Powell who worked for the Okhrana as secret agents during this time.

Another country’s secret service history would also prove invaluable, this was East Germany’s Stasi, which was formed much later in 1950 and operated from Berlin and was fully operational up until 1989 when the Berlin Wall fell and the East and the West were unified.

A complete history of the formation of the Stasi right through to its demise is freely available to download on the Internet in the form of a comprehensive article on the Wikipedia website. This article also gives the full details of persons who were alleged to have been informants for the Stasi. There is no evidence to show any of them or any of their relatives came to harm as a result of their names being published in the public domain.

In addition the decision notice from the Butterworth hearing made mention of the fact that Butterworth, had he been called to give evidence would have made mention of examples of other secret service operations which would have revealed the names and details of informants from other countries. Butterworth later confirmed to me that these would have been the Okhrana records from Paris and Moscow in addition to records from the Paris Prefecture of Police. The aforementioned examples clearly show that other countries have disclosed the details of informants and spies, which are now freely available in the public domain.

Another argument the police would be seeking to rely on as part of their case would be the need to not only protect the identity of informants but also any living family members or relatives.

Simon Wood my co-researcher set about an exercise with a view to seeing if it were possible to even trace any living family members or relatives of informants mentioned in the register and ledgers which were already known via Clutterbuck. In his thesis, he himself had singled out the details of five different cases involving specifically named informants. Each of the five cases was different to the next. After a long and protracted research exercise Simon established that it was impossible to identify and trace any modern-day family members or living relatives of any of these informants.

Whilst preparing my appeal I looked again at a National Archives file from the Metropolitan Police numbered MEPO 38. I had way back in 2008 submitted a number of requests to access the files still held by Special Branch and which had not yet been made public, all of which covered the time period relating to the Whitechapel murders and I believed may contain further unreleased information on the murders.

I then submitted a new Freedom of Information request to the Metropolitan Police to be given free and unrestricted access to the unpublished files contained in MEPO 38 in unredacted form. I would have bet my house on a refusal notice being forthcoming in respect of this request.

Sure enough as expected the refusal notice was served on me. My request was described as being vexatious, which I have to say I took exception to. It

was suggested that the request was a deliberate attempt to disrupt the forthcoming appeal proceedings and that I was deliberately harassing the Metropolitan Police as well as being a disruptive burden. There were no other specific reasons given for the refusal other than the reference to the earlier request I made in 2008 which was met with a collective refusal notice.

So it was now a case of having to conform to protocol yet again. The next step was for me to yet again lodge and appeal notice with the Metropolitan Police Public Access Office. However, again I knew they would uphold the decision. As I have stated previously it seems a ridiculous situation where one part of the police service is asked to review a decision made by another.

As I had predicted my appeal was rejected. I then set out on what I knew would be another lengthy appeal process which I knew ultimately might result in a second Information Tribunal hearing before a judge. However, in the interim period the police reviewed their decision in relation to the files contained in MEPO 38 and stated that there were no files on the Whitechapel murders contained within MEPO 38. I was not totally happy with their answer having regard to the fact that I had now identified six separate unnamed files still contained in MEPO 38, which could have been from the relevant time period all of which had not been made public.

In view of this I then submitted a Freedom of Information request to view those six specific files should they cover the relevant time period. The Metropolitan Police finally replied stating that the unnamed files referred to did not cover the period of time relative to all the Whitechapel murders.

Having regard to my pending tribunal hearing on February 4th 2011 an initial directions hearing took place in relation to my original appeal regarding the register and ledgers and the date for the full hearing was set for May 10th 2011 and was scheduled to last three days. At the directions hearing I asked the police if they were prepared to accept Clutterbuck’s full written assessment and evaluation of the register and ledgers in relation to the number of informants names actually contained within the register and ledgers as being correct.

I still felt that I wanted to try to make my case even stronger and set about trying to track down Lindsay Clutterbuck. I felt that if I could enlist his help and try to persuade him to talk to me in detail, he would provide me with a statement which I could use in support of my appeal and in addition throw much more light on just where he found the register and the ledgers in addition to other issues which would later come to light prior to the actual hearing and during the hearing itself.

I did manage to track him down to Cambridge where he works as a research leader for RAND (Europe) a division of the RAND Corporation. We had a telephone conversation where I went to great lengths to try to persuade him to answer some of my many questions. He declined to answer any questions, nor would he agree to give me any form of written statement. He felt it wrong for him to give evidence against his former employers and didn't want to be the subject of any publicity in respect to his current work and his current employers. I can see his argument and although bitterly disappointed I had to respect his wishes.

However, in a short space of time things would change yet again. The day after speaking to Clutterbuck I received a reply from the police solicitor Mr. Blay. He stated that the police would not accept the Clutterbuck thesis as an accurate assessment of the ledgers and register, because the ledgers were apparently used by Clutterbuck for his own purposes without authority. In view of this reply I requested them to do their own full assessment of the register and the ledgers and to provide that prior to the commencement of the hearing together with any statements to support this.

Now I suspected the police were clutching at straws and attempting to muddy the waters. After all there had been no mention of the authority issue regarding Clutterbuck at the previous Butterworth hearing, or in any correspondence I had with the police over the past three years.

If this were correct then why had they not taken steps to have the thesis removed from the public domain, or asked Clutterbuck to edit it, and why wasn't Clutterbuck then prosecuted for misconduct in a public office or even an internal police disciplinary offence both of which if found guilty he could have faced the sack. The simple answer was I believe they simply weren't concerned. Because following the publication of the thesis and Ms. Lowde's Internet revelations they were still prepared to allow free and

unrestricted access, as Butterworth was clearly given permission subject to him signing the undertaking up until 2008.

I again contacted Clutterbuck and made him aware of what the police were now suggesting and that they were intending to use that in an open public tribunal hearing. He denied the accusation outright, and was most concerned that his reputation and integrity had been called in to doubt. I suggested that he may now wish to reconsider his decision with regards to now assisting me by providing a statement. After sending him a full overview of the whole case since 2008, he failed to respond.

Now I had a specific date set for the appeal hearing I began the long process of collating all of my evidence I had gathered and which I was intending to use, and putting it all together as a file. Having gone through the statements I was seeking to rely on and various paper exhibits I believed I had a very strong case in support of my appeal and was quietly confident of winning the day. However, I knew there was a long way to go and there would be many twists and turns in this appeal before it finally came to be heard in May. My own “evidence in chief” statement would total 44 pages in length and I had amassed 21 document exhibits.

CHAPTER TWELVE

INFORMANTS

As previously stated the Special Branch policy is not to release the details and identity of informants at any time whether they go back 125 years or whether it be in more recent times. However, the viability of the "no names" policy is already coming under question in the courts. In February 1998, the Secret Intelligence Service also known as MI6 was forced by the high court to identify a businessman who had worked for them over the last 20 years and who had provided information to them over that lengthy period of time. MI5 have also in the past eleven years released files to The National Archives, which contain the names of informants/agents who were active during World War II.

I would also argue that as well as trying to protect the names of informants the police also have a duty and are under an obligation to any living relatives of the victims who I believe still have a right to know of any information which may lead to the identity of the killer responsible for taking the lives of their relatives over 125 years previous.

As the informants issue was an important factor I knew that not all informants are suitable to be authorised as informants under the new legislation. The police now have to satisfy themselves that the informants will be of value under the informant programme. Once authorized, the informant then has to fill in a ten-page document, and is then given a pseudonym. All of this is then linked to which officer deals with their information and at which station the officer is based. Informants are "asked" to give their "proper name and address and also family member's names". This is in case at any stage in the future the police have to take steps to protect the informant and his family.

Each form in relation to each separate informant is numbered so the authorities can keep track of the flow of information and how much that particular informant has been paid. The details are then entered on a computer system, which the police will say is only accessible to a handful of officers.

The informant is then officially known as a source and allocated a police handler, but not always the officer who has introduced the informant to the system. Other officers are also likely to be directly involved with that informant.

One problem with the new system is that informers or prospective informers are reluctant to deal with officers they do not know or trust for obvious reasons. This sometimes in itself will deter that informant from being registered as an informant simply because they will not talk to just anyone especially if they don't know them.

Most informants are already aware of the potential danger and the serious consequences arising from informing on other criminals, and if this does happen it is something the police cannot compensate for.

It is the responsibility of the police to reiterate these dangers, in addition to making would-be informants aware of the police policy on disclosure of informant details. But in practice this seldom happens. The reason it doesn't happen is simple; if the police were to say we cannot guarantee your name will ever be disclosed, or you are likely to get seriously injured or killed and family members are likely to come to harm if the persons informed upon find out, they would never recruit anyone. So the full ramifications of a person becoming an informant are never fully detailed. It is an issue, which the police would no doubt contest.

Under the new system, the handler and his informant will sometimes have next to no contact. This is in total contrast to how it used to be whereby informants and police would regularly meet on a social basis for the purposes of handing over information.

Informants nowadays can earn vast sums of money for disclosing quality information leading to arrest and conviction of criminals and terrorist alike, all topped up by any rewards insurance companies may add. But routine amounts tend to vary from £50 to £500. Informants are usually paid on results.

However, on occasions when informants are tasked with the job of infiltrating criminal groups or criminal gangs who are now known as "targets" an informant may spend months with such a group before being

able to provide information that can be acted upon. In these cases the informant would be paid a monthly retainer.

The world of informants is at times a dark, sinister and sometimes dangerous world for both sides. Especially when informants are tasked with infiltrating criminal groups and what they are asked to do by both police and criminals alike.

Some informants are in fact themselves leading criminals who use the police to eliminate their criminal rivals while at the same time feathering their own nests with financial rewards. Evidence in support of this will be produced later.

The police will suggest that they now have a safe and secure system, which guarantees complete anonymity. This is simply not true. Under the new legislation there are far more officers involved with informants than ever before, and the more there are the more likely it is that idle talk may inadvertently disclose the identity of an informant.

All the details of today's registered informants are kept on computer, which a number of officers will be able to access. There is also the question of hackers being able to access the records. If the Pentagon's computers in the USA can be hacked I am sure these records could be also. There is no safe system and no guarantee.

There are a number of different categories of informant and as suggested many do not come under the auspices of the new legislation. Firstly there is the informant who gives information purely for his or her own financial gain. The rewards to informants are sometimes very high. For example, in addition to what the police pay for information, insurance companies will often pay up to 20% for information leading to the recovery of stolen property, and this can be very substantial in, for example, a million pound robbery. The rewards to this type of informant far outweigh the risks they take, and I suggest that informants will continue to take those risks, despite any details being made public relating to the activities of other informants either past or present.

Then there is the informant who gives information for a purely personal motive, such as revenge or simply to spite another person, or in many cases where criminals fall out with each other. These types of informants act

usually on a one-off basis, and usually they do not seek payment. To them revenge is sufficient payment. This has gone on for many years and will continue to do so despite any details being made public relating to the activities of other informants past or present. Under the new legislation it is highly unlikely that this type of informant would be registered as a source.

There is the criminal who finds him or herself under arrest for a crime for which they are likely to receive a custodial sentence. These people will either freely offer to give information to seek a lesser sentence or attempt to strike a deal to have the charges dropped.

Alternatively, many persons who are arrested will be approached by officers with a view to cultivating him or her as an informant. This side of the informant system has been present since Victorian times and probably many years before then. I operated in this way during my time as a detective and I still see officers doing it today it in my current line of work. Come what may, this process will not change.

Then we have members of the public who volunteer information to the police as they go about their daily routines. These persons would not be recorded as informants/sources. The officer would simply complete what is now known as an intelligence report, which would be handed to the intelligence office. As a result some positive action may then follow.

At this point I should say that from what I have seen of the registers there are many entries which fall within this category.

There are also members of the public who volunteer information via anonymous telephone crime lines. They of course may think that they are safe as a result of their actions but the truth is that if a person gets arrested or a house searched and stolen property found it doesn’t take that person long to work out that he has been informed upon and who that informant may be.

Finally there is the informant who by his own actions puts himself in the public eye. This more often than not would be a defecting member of a criminal group. In the 1970s and 80s these came to be known as “supergrasses”. The evidence of such persons can from time to time become an embarrassment to law enforcement agencies.

I again reiterate what I said earlier, that there is a real and present danger to persons from both ends of the informant's spectrum who give information, that some harm may befall them should the persons being informed upon find out, or by other means other than police disclosure.

The reason for mentioning these different types of informants was to show to the tribunal that there have always been these categories of informants and there always will be and they will not be deterred from giving information come what may as the police were going to suggest as part of their case.

I felt that I also needed to show the tribunal that there were other various ways that an informant's details could be made public. This I hoped would negate the statement of the police stating that even today informants are given strong or absolute guarantees that their names would never be disclosed. I knew they would say they do all they can to protect the identities of informants but the reality is that there are other potential and equally damaging ways the details of an informant can come into the public domain.

I would refer again to Lindsay Clutterbuck, who we have heard was a former high-ranking Metropolitan Police officer. He disclosed informant's details in his thesis, and he admits in his thesis that he knew of the non-disclosure police policy. Whether or not he had official permission, at the time of his accessing the records and subsequent disclosure he was a serving police officer, and this does not detract from the fact that by publicly disclosing those informant details it appears he did so contrary to the police policy on disclosure.

This is the first of several clear examples of how informant details can be disclosed to the public, and illustrates the fact that, despite the non-disclosure policy, there can be no absolute guarantees that similar instances will not occur.

Moving on to the other various ways informant's details can be made public and by whom. One such way is via Freedom of Information requests. Tribunals can order the police and other agencies to disclose records or documents, which contain details of informants. Each individual case is judged on its merits.

Another such way would be through members of the legal profession or their immediate staff who have access to files and records, which give details of informants. I am such a case; in the course of my current work I come in contact with current informants and also those who the police seek to recruit. So if I wanted I could quite easily disclose those details, I would hasten to say that I would not but I use myself to prove a point.

The press is another example. We are all well aware of the power of the press and at times wonder how they obtain some of the information, which they print, but it is a fact that they do obtain informant's details and do publish that information from time to time. I discovered a number of examples both past and present. The present day examples I will refer to in due course. But one from the past is a high profile murder case from 1883 the Phoenix Park murders in Dublin. Two senior British government officials were murdered by members of "The Invincibles", a splinter group of the Fenians who, as previously mentioned, were the Victorian equivalent of the IRA. As a result of the use of informants in that case a number of men were arrested, convicted and hanged.

The names of those informants were disclosed in various newspapers of the day along with the amounts of money they were paid. One of the informants named in one of the articles is Theo Farrell. His name also appears in "*The Activities of Informants"* document previously referred to which also makes mention of the Phoenix Park murders. Another named informant William Lammie aka Fenning is also mentioned in that same document. Another informant in the Phoenix Park murders was James Carey.

I now refer to the immense power of the World Wide Web. There are many social networking sites, which give everyone almost total freedom of speech and the ability to write and publish whatever they like. I refer in the main to Facebook and Twitter. Anyone can openly publish details of known or suspected informants on these sites, as has been the case, which I will shortly disclose. I should also make mention of the WikiLeaks site which openly published highly sensitive information leaked from government agencies around the world.

A court of law has the power to direct a party to disclose the name of an informant if a request has been made by one of the other parties. Such a

request I suggest will not be a tentative request. The party making the request which is usually the defence will no doubt already be aware of whom the informant is in any event but will use this request as a ploy to damage the prosecution case and will be a direct attempt to try to get the prosecution to abandon the case.

It is a matter for the judge as to whether he accedes to that request. If he does then the prosecution is faced with a dilemma. Do they compromise the details of the informant or do they, as the police have nobly averred, abandon the case?

Abandoning the case may seem a noble gesture but the police may have another motive for abandoning a trial under those circumstances, that would be if an informant was identified, then he might tell the court or later the press that he had been tasked with infiltrating a criminal group by the police and had been encouraged by the police to take active part in the crimes committed by that group.

That in itself raises a number of serious issues, agent provocateur being one, incitement to commit crime being another or even perhaps conspiracy. As part of my evidence I would be urging the tribunal not to be taken in by such a statement when given by the police during the hearing.

Another way an informant's details could be made known is from other police and civilian staff who staff police station custody areas on a daily basis and have direct involvement in persons who are arrested and detained.

It is not uncommon for informants to get themselves arrested either by reason of the tasks they have been asked to undertake by their police handlers, which from time to time do not go according to plan, or simply the fact that because they are prolific criminals in their own right and as a result sometimes get caught committing crime.

When this happens they are taken to a police station as any other normal prisoner and given their legal rights, one of those rights is to have someone told of their arrest and detention. Most persons arrested opt for wives, girlfriends, mothers and fathers. Not so informants, they need to make contact with their police handlers, so they then ask to speak to them as soon as possible. It is then that it would no doubt become clear to other police

staff and civilian custody staff on duty at that time, of the fact that the prisoner may be a police informant.

Further to that the prisoner may later receive a visit from his police handler, or may even be released without charge due to a sudden lack of evidence. This would quite clearly indicate to other officers and staff that the person may be an informant. As such any of those persons could subsequently reveal that person as an informant.

In addition to my written statement of evidence I would be required to submit to the tribunal a total of twenty-one document exhibits I had amassed. Some of which were made up of an assortment of material I obtained from the World Wide Web on informants and originated from newspaper articles, crime forums and dissertations.

One newspaper article described a man being shot on his doorstep for allegedly being a police informant after his and details of other alleged police informants were put up on the social networking site Facebook. The most important issue surrounding this case is that one of the persons shown as being arrested and charged in connection with disclosure was employed as a civilian at the police station and had computer access to police information.

Another article described how a list of informants together with family details and addresses was found at the home of a known criminal. All of this occurred six years after the new legislation was introduced, which was supposed to give more protection to informants and to ensure that informants receive total anonymity. Clearly this shows that the new system is not as watertight as the police would suggest.

Other documents I produced related to informants and informant-related issues together with information, which suggests named informants were actively engaged in the commission of crimes whilst working for the police together with statements from the police whereby they accepted there were failings in the new informants programme.

Another article described a Metropolitan Police case where the police actually named an informant. According to the article the named informant is supposed to have given the police unreliable information. The article

suggests that this informant was also involved in the commission of crime whilst in the service of the police.

I also found a confidential informant's source report marked "category high". This is a security service document, which relates to a high profile case and gives details of information given by a source/informant. This document relates to what has come to be known as the Scappaticci case, which occurred during the IRA conflict. At the time this and other sensitive documents were leaked it sent shock waves through the security service.

In brief the names shown in that report relate to the following:

Freddie "Stakeknife" Scappaticci, who ran the IRA's notorious "death squad" while working for the security services as an informer.

Joseph Fenton, codename "The Driver", shot dead by Scappaticci's squad in February 1989.

Charles McIlmurray, Special Branch agent "Sealink", abducted and killed by Scappaticci's gang in April 1987.

This report reveals how an IRA team set out to shoot McIlmurray and his two Special Branch handlers in Belfast, but aborted when they spotted a police traffic car.

A further article obtained which was relevant to that report which contains references to Scappaticci, contained details of another specific informant as disclosed by an unnamed security service handler. This also suggests that the named informant who was, in addition to providing information, alleged to have been actively engaged in criminal activities to which the security services turned a blind eye and encouraged him to continue. According to the article the information given by the handler had been corroborated by another unidentified handler.

All of these articles make it crystal clear the police cannot possibly give any guarantee strong or absolute to an informant that their details will never come into the public domain.

I had hoped that once the police had sight of my written statement and saw the content of my documentary evidence they may choose to consider their position in the appeal. I would doubt they would want some of my

evidence being released yet again back into the public domain. It certainly would not show the police in a favourable light and could in fact have a negative impact on the recruitment, and retention of informants.

The police stated that if the names of informants are released from the ledgers and registers it may deter informants from coming forward or force current ones to desist and withdraw their services. However, I would suggest that some the aforementioned examples I have mentioned are far more likely to have a detrimental effect on informer recruitment and retention than the releasing of the surnames and pseudonyms of a handful of informants contained in 125 year-old ledger and register.

In the course of my case preparation I managed to obtain the details of the written policy on disclosure operated by MI5 in connection with amongst other issues the naming of informants. This contains no mention of the perception the Metropolitan Police seemed to have that releasing informants names would deter others from coming forward, nor was there any mention of any fears that might force current informants/agents to suddenly withdraw their services. I also ascertained that MI5 since 2000 have been constantly releasing files to The National Archives, which contain the names of informants/agents under what would appear to have been an unwritten 100-year rule. Against that Special Branch (Counter Terrorism) last released files to The National Archives in 2000.

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

THE FREEDOM OF INFORMATION HEARING PART 2

Finally my file of evidence and my witness statements were complete and I submitted it to the Information Commissioners whose responsibility it was to prepare a full file based on all parties' evidence and then to serve each party and the tribunal their full copy. However, I would not be allowed to get sight of any witness statements or any documents the police would be using in any closed session, or allowed to be present when any of that evidence was presented to the tribunal.

Eventually I had served on me a file of evidence from the police, which they were intending to rely on during the hearing. This was made up of correspondence and internal memos from the then Special Branch Office and most of it dated 2003. There were several internal memos from Clutterbuck to one of the previous police witnesses in the Butterworth hearing, Yvette Arnold who it would appear is now and was then a civilian member of staff.

In those memos to her Clutterbuck clearly states that in his opinion the names of informants from the register and ledgers should be made public and for them to be sent to The National Archives in accordance with the policy adopted by other security agencies. In her reply she is of the opinion that the non-disclosure policy should remain the same. Although she does say that if this policy is challenged then it should be reviewed in each individual case.

Clearly that didn't happen in any of my requests. In one of the memos she also refers to a process known as "Privileged Access". This is where privileged researchers are allowed to view unexpurgated documents on agreeing to sign a written undertaking. Clearly again I was not allowed to do this despite in my very first Freedom of Information request saying I was prepared to sign a written undertaking.

Another internal memo was from a Commander Pearce (now retired) who it would seem signed the memo and endorsed Clutterbuck's views on the policy change and also the sending of the register and the ledgers to The

National Archives. All of these memos were then forwarded to a Commander Black who replaced Commander Pearce as head of the department. It clearly can be seen that he also was in agreement that the Special Branch policy should be brought in line with the policies of other government agencies as far as public disclosure was concerned. It would appear that for whatever reason this was never applied.

Furthermore, the police were not producing any documentation, which corroborates any decision not to change their policy. I was very surprised that the police had served these documents on me as part of their case and they were intending to use this in evidence as some of the content of these letters and memos I felt would help to strengthen my case.

Having assessed and evaluated the contents of those memos and letters I still felt it vitally important to try to get Clutterbuck on my side. I could now see his integrity being questioned and with the press attending the hearing this might cause him problems with his current employers. In view of all of this I made one last-ditch attempt to try to get him to assist me and in doing so giving him the opportunity of answering the allegations being levied against him. Again he declined to reply to any of my emails or telephone calls.

I eventually had sight of the witness statements of witnesses the police would be calling to give their evidence in open session. They made it clear some parts would be given in closed session. There were no surprises, all the same police witnesses who gave evidence in the Butterworth hearing would be doing the same save for one police officer who they gave the name to me and later indicated that he was to remain anonymous and his evidence given behind a closed screen.

Having read the statements it was apparent that they were going to rely on nothing more than mere words to support their objections. To this end they were relying on each witness to corroborate other witnesses when identifying the concerns and personal beliefs they had highlighted in their witness statements.

In addition they were seeking to rely on relevant legislation to support their arguments that legislation being Sections 24 and 30 (2) of the Freedom

of Information Act. Section 24 related to national security issues and is explained as follows:

Information is exempt from disclosure if the exemption is required for the purpose of safeguarding national security.

The authority may obtain a certificate from a minister certifying that the exemption is required.

It is not sufficient for information to relate to national security matters; disclosure must pose a real threat to the interests of national security.

The exemption is subject to a public interest test.

Clearly I had raised a public interest factor as part of my appeal notice and would argue that any national security issues raised by the police did not pose a real threat to national security.

Another part of the legislation they were seeking to rely on was Section 30 (2), which creates an exemption for information:

Which is, or has been held for the purposes of a criminal investigation.

Which is, or has been held for criminal proceedings conducted by a public authority; or,

Which was, obtained or recorded for various investigative functions and relates to the obtaining of information from confidential sources.

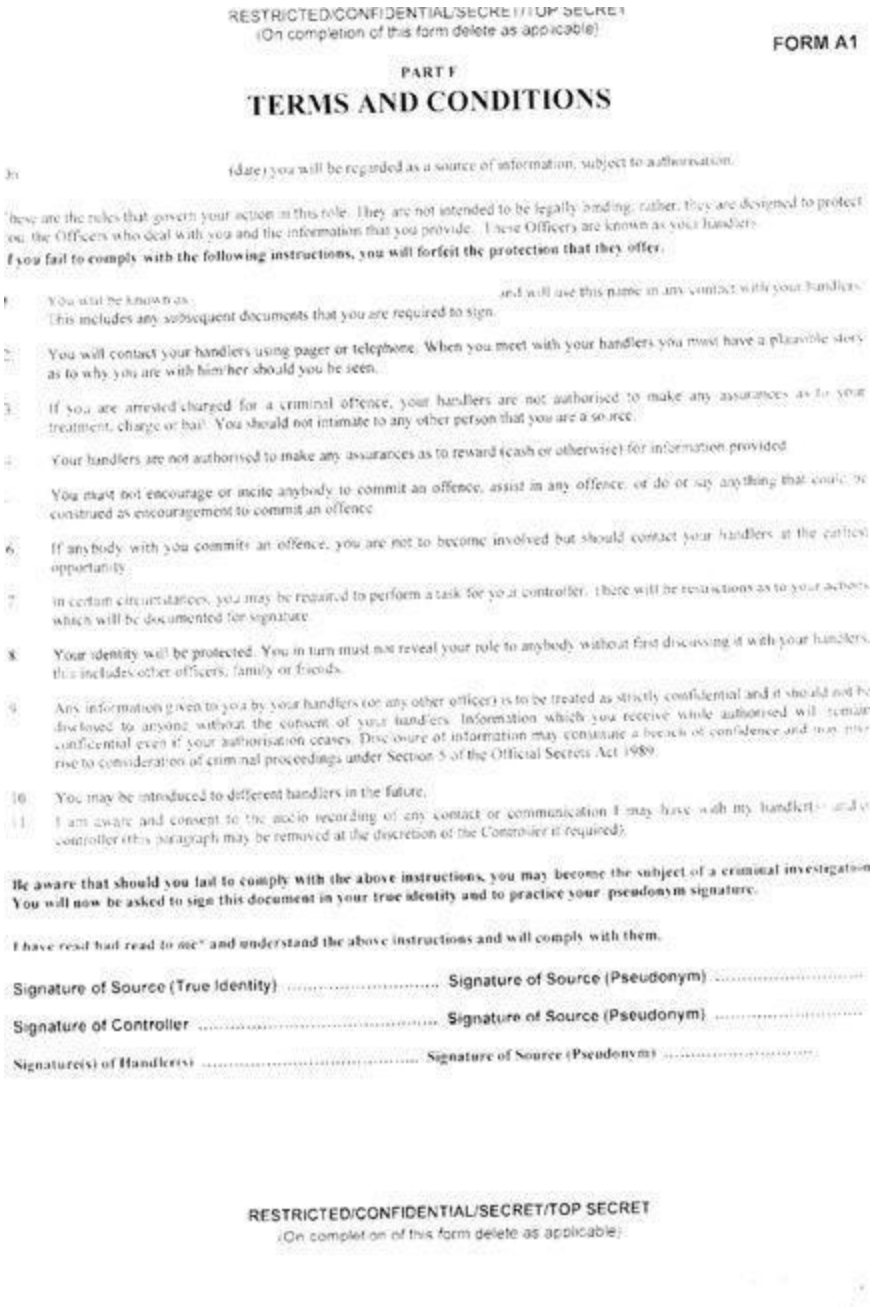
Section 30 provides a class based exemption. This means it is not necessary to identify some prejudice that may arise as a result of disclosure in order to engage the exemption.

As the exemption is subject to the public interest test, a public authority must consider whether the public interest in maintaining the exemption outweighs the public interest in disclosing the information. Although you do not have to identify some prejudice in order to engage the exemption, it will be an important factor when applying the public interest test.

My main argument in relation to this part of the legislation was that the register in particular was nothing more than an index, which related to original documents, which would have come under the above definitions.

There were a number of concerns I had with the police evidence leading up to the case. The judge in his earlier direction had directed that all documentary evidence should be served by March 11th 2011. After all of these exchanges the police still produced documents outside of the specified dates.

One such document I believed would be invaluable to my appeal and when I received it I couldn’t believe my luck. The document in question was classed as confidential and related to the recruitment of modern-day informants. It set out a number of conditions the police would accede to as well as setting out what was expected of an informant, (Picture 17).



RESTRICTED/CONFIDENTIAL/SECRET/TOP SECRET
(On completion of this form delete as applicable)

FORM A1

PART F

TERMS AND CONDITIONS

3) (date) you will be regarded as a source of information, subject to authorisation.

These are the rules that govern your action in this role. They are not intended to be legally binding, rather, they are designed to protect you, the Officers who deal with you and the information that you provide. These Officers are known as your handlers.

If you fail to comply with the following instructions, you will forfeit the protection that they offer.

1. You will be known as _____ and will use this name in any contact with your handlers. This includes any subsequent documents that you are required to sign.
2. You will contact your handlers using pager or telephone. When you meet with your handlers you must have a plausible story as to why you are with him/her should you be seen.
3. If you are arrested/charged for a criminal offence, your handlers are not authorised to make any assurances as to your treatment, charge or bail. You should not intimate to any other person that you are a source.
4. Your handlers are not authorised to make any assurances as to reward (cash or otherwise) for information provided.
5. You must not encourage or incite anybody to commit an offence, assist in any offence, or do or say anything that could be construed as encouragement to commit an offence.
6. If anybody with you commits an offence, you are not to become involved but should contact your handlers at the earliest opportunity.
7. In certain circumstances, you may be required to perform a task for you a controller. There will be restrictions as to your actions which will be documented for signature.
8. Your identity will be protected. You in turn must not reveal your role to anybody without first discussing it with your handlers, this includes other officers, family or friends.
9. Any information given to you by your handlers (or any other officer) is to be treated as strictly confidential and it should not be disclosed to anyone without the consent of your handlers. Information which you receive while authorised will remain confidential even if your authorisation ceases. Disclosure of information may constitute a breach of confidence and may give rise to consideration of criminal proceedings under Section 5 of the Official Secrets Act 1989.
10. You may be introduced to different handlers in the future.
11. I am aware and consent to the audio recording of any contact or communication I may have with my handlers and/or controller (this paragraph may be removed at the discretion of the Controller if required).

Be aware that should you fail to comply with the above instructions, you may become the subject of a criminal investigation. You will now be asked to sign this document in your true identity and to practice your pseudonym signature.

I have read/had read to me* and understand the above instructions and will comply with them.

Signature of Source (True Identity) ..... Signature of Source (Pseudonym) .....

Signature of Controller ..... Signature of Source (Pseudonym) .....

Signature(s) of Handler(s) ..... Signature of Source (Pseudonym) .....

RESTRICTED/CONFIDENTIAL/SECRET/TOP SECRET
(On completion of this form delete as applicable)

One particular paragraph, which was interesting and most helpful was the paragraph directed at the informant, it simply read, "*We will protect your identity*". There is no mention in that document about protecting the identity above and beyond their lifetime. Nor is there any mention of doing the same in relation to relatives or descendants in the present or the future. I saw this document as the new changed policy on informants, which I believe had been introduced following discussions referred to in the internal

police memos of 2003 previously discussed, where there was talk of changing the policy which was in existence at that time.

My own personal view of all of the evidence I had amassed and submitted was that it took the police by surprise. I firmly believe that they were of the opinion that they simply had to turn up in force at the hearing to be able to secure a victory. This was the reason I believe that they were forced to try to introduce documents outside of the original directions in an effort to prop up their case. My beliefs were confirmed by events that took place both on the day before the hearing commenced and events of the morning of the hearing.

Right from the outset I had concerns about the evidence the police were going to give in closed session and voiced my concerns to them and the commissioners as well as the tribunal judge. My concerns must have had an impact on the police because the day before the hearing they served on me a statement from the police officer who was going to remain anonymous and was to be referred to as DI D, the police had previously indicated that he would be giving all of his evidence in closed session.

On reading his statement I could clearly see that none of it met the criteria for being heard in closed session in any event. It was clear their plan was for him to give all of his evidence in closed session thereby depriving me of the opportunity of being able to cross-examine him.

The day before the police gave notice that they were intending to introduce a second additional statement from one of the witnesses Supt. Julian McKinney who was head of Covert Intelligence, the department within the police, which deals specifically with informants. The police indicated it was to be given in closed session. I gave notice to the judge in advance that I would be objecting to the late submission of the statement.

May 10th 2011 saw the opening of the hearing proper. However, 30 minutes before the hearing commenced the barrister representing the police served on me a number of stated cases, which he was intending to seek to rely on with a view to allow the submission of the second and late statement of Supt. McKinney.

Having not had any time to peruse these or to study them in any detail with a view to adding to my basic representations I had to rely on the judge

to interpret them in a way he believed was right and proper given the legislation the police were seeking to rely on.

The outcome was that the judge stated he was legally bound to allow this statement to be tendered as evidence. However, he realised my concerns over the closed session evidence and ruled that with one exception this statement could be given in open session and I was given a copy.

This statement confirmed what I thought, that the police at this late stage were still looking to prop up a case they thought they now might lose. The statement in question was all hearsay and related to an unnamed officer from one of the other unnamed security agencies confirming their policy on the non-disclosing of the identities of informants. I would seek to use this to my advantage at a later stage during cross-examination of the officer and would ask why there was no specific statement from that officer himself or why was he not produced as a witness to give his evidence first-hand?

Prior to the commencement of the hearing I made an application to the judge that all police witnesses should remain outside the hearing prior to them giving evidence. This is not normal practice for these types of hearing however, under the circumstances I felt it right to make the request having regard for the fact that some of my questions would be directed at all of the witnesses individually and felt that if they knew what questions were coming and how other witnesses had answered it might prejudice my case. Despite objections from the two barristers representing the police and the information commissioners the judge allowed my request.

Eventually the hearing got under way. The first witness called by the police was Yvette Arnold. She was in charge of the maintenance, management and retention of Special Branch files and more up to date files of SO 15, which is the new name for Special Branch (Counter terrorism). She had also been called as a witness in the previous Butterworth hearing.

Her main testimony related to the internal Special Branch memos going back to 2003 which I have previously referred to and other correspondence attached to those memos. These showed she had been involved in the proposed change of the police policy regarding not retaining the identities of informants forever.

In evidence she stated that she was not aware of the existence of the register and the ledgers until 2003 when Clutterbuck drew her attention to them. She stated that to that very day she did not know where they had come from. She firmly stated that in any event Clutterbuck would not have had any permission to access these records or to publish anything from within them without special permission.

Furthermore, she stated that following her being made aware of the existence of these records she did not have any conversation with Clutterbuck or any further conversation with any other Special Branch personnel with regards to their contents or the content of Clutterbuck's thesis.

She stated that she knew of the existence of the policy relating to the non-disclosure of the identities of informants, but reiterated that although there were discussions regarding the change to that policy as far as she was concerned that policy was never changed and still remains the same today.

She agreed that the ledgers and register were offered to The National Archives in 2004, and stated that they were examined by their client manager from The National Archives with a view for possible future preservation of them. At this point she went to great lengths to suggest that had The National Archives agreed to take these documents they would have been redacted prior to them being released to them for public viewing. I personally have not seen any documentation confirming that either from the police or from The National Archives.

It became apparent that Ms. Arnold in my opinion was less than economical with the truth. This was borne out by further questions I put to her during further cross-examination of her in relation to the privileged access facility referred to by her in some of the correspondence. She stated that this privileged access facility was withdrawn in 2005. Clearly that is not the case as Butterworth in 2008 was offered this facility but declined to sign the undertaking.

In another document which Ms. Arnold was responsible for writing there is mention of a parliamentary question being lodged in parliament relating to the Phoenix Park murders of 1883, the then Home Secretary in 2003 forwarded this question to Special Branch for them to answer. In the

aforementioned document although not specifically detailing the question it was obvious that the question related to informants used in connection with that investigation.

When questioned initially about this parliamentary question Ms. Arnold stated that the question related to what was the oldest file Special Branch still held. Clearly again that was not correct because as previously stated the question is specifically related to the Phoenix Park murders.

The next witness was Detective Superintendent Julian McKinney from a SO 15 (Counter terrorism command of the Metropolitan Police). Superintendent McKinney is head of covert functions of that department, which involves the recruitment of and the management and retention of modern-day informants known as covert human intelligence sources.

Supt. McKinney I felt was without a doubt the driving force behind the police case to withhold the ledgers and register. In his evidence he stated he had seen the register and the ledgers and accepted that the ledgers only made occasional references to payments to informants. He stated he was unable to confirm the accuracy of the entries or their connection to any living relatives. He accepted that it may not be possible to track down any living relatives of informants by using public records, but went to great lengths to suggest they could still be identified with local or family knowledge.

Supt. McKinney in his cross-examination by me stuck rigidly to his principles throughout, and never missed an opportunity to put to the tribunal his fears and concerns regarding the release of the contents of the register and the ledgers. He had also given the same evidence in the Butterworth tribunal hearing in exactly the same fashion.

But of course was that evidence he gave sufficient to prove that all the police concerns and objections were fully justified? He mentioned that there was in existence a policy of non-disclosure of the identities of informants, which extended to above and beyond their lifetime. He also stated that extended to families and descendants. He was however not able to provide any documentary evidence to show the existence of such a policy either past or present. He also said that from his time in the police since 1985 he is

not aware of any policy change and knew nothing about the proposed policy changes proposed by Clutterbuck in 2003.

I then asked him to look at the police document, which is in current use in relation to modern-day informants (Picture 17). In principal he accepted that it was an informant policy document, and also accepted that it mentioned nothing about protecting an informant's identity above and beyond their lifetime, nor did it mention anything about families or descendants.

As I have already mentioned it is an important document. It clearly casts a doubt about some of the informant issues the police were seeking to rely on. Superintendent McKinney would not be drawn by the suggestion I put to him regarding this new document, that the forever policy which was in existence in 2003 was in fact changed following the suggestion by Clutterbuck and the endorsements and agreement by both Commanders Pearce and Black and this new document is testament to that.

In my cross-examination I went to great lengths to expand on the late additional statement he had provided in relation to his conversations with an "unnamed" person or persons from an "unnamed" other security agency. Superintendent McKinney could give no plausible explanation as to why no formal written statement had been taken from anybody from that agency nor could he give any plausible explanation as to why any person from that agency had not been called to give direct evidence before the tribunal. He agreed that that would have strengthened the police case even more.

In the latter part of my cross-examination of him, I put to him the Royal Irish Constabulary Informants register, and The Named and Paid informants file. He could give no details of his informant recruitment or management programme being affected by the release of these important documents into the public domain. Furthermore, he could give no details from the current Royal Ulster Constabulary now known as The Police Service for Northern Ireland or The Garda Siochana to suggest that the release of the documents had in any way affected their current informants programme.

In continuing with this line of questioning Supt. McKinney could not give any details of any harm befalling any relatives or descendants of any late Victorian police informants by any modern-day Irish terrorist group or

groups. Nor could he give any details of the fact that any of these modern-day groups were actively seeking out relatives or descendants from that time period.

As to the suggestion that Clutterbuck had acted without authority the Supt. stated that he could find no written records to suggest he was given permission. He however accepts that both internal and criminal prosecutions could have been taken against Clutterbuck, but offered no explanation as to why that never happened.

The next police witness was Roger Pearce who was a retired Metropolitan Police Commander. He retired in 2003 when head of Special Branch and Director of Intelligence. Mr. Pearce had also previously given evidence in the Butterworth tribunal hearing. Most of Mr. Pearce's evidence was in line with the previous witness in enforcing the police concerns over the release of the register and ledgers.

In part of his evidence in chief he stated that despite being involved in correspondence in 2003 regarding the ledgers and register he had never ever seen them. A statement I found strange to say the least.

When questioned about his involvement in the memos Mr. Pearce was now suggesting that there was a clear case of misinterpretation regarding the memos he actually signed. He was now stating that he had not signed them agreeing for the "Forever Policy" to be changed, he was simply signing them with a view to the possibility of exploring the issue of change. Without a doubt Mr. Pearce was in my opinion desperately trying to dig himself out of a big hole.

Prior to the final witness giving evidence the police indicated they wanted the witness to remain anonymous and to be allowed to give his evidence behind a screen. He was to be known as DI D. Now as to him remaining anonymous it was somewhat farcical as Mr. Blay the solicitor who had been acting for the police throughout this appeal had already given me his full name in a list of witnesses in an earlier email. As previously stated it was the intentions of the police to have the officer give all of his evidence in closed session but decided better of it at the very last moment.

The officer was a detective inspector who in his statement stated that during his service since joining in 1990 he had worked in various

specialised police departments. He now worked in the department overseen by Supt. McKinney as a controller of police informant handlers and stated he is involved in the day-to-day management of informants.

He kept in line with the previous witnesses by reiterating all the fears, concerns and all the paranoia that informants now had, all of which the other police witnesses who had gone before him had raised. In cross-examination he did however accept that informants do have a choice, that being they are fully aware of the dangers there are by becoming an informant and do not have to become an informant, or having become an informant they are free to opt out at any time.

The inspector also conceded that there are many other jobs in the public domain which also have a fear factor and paranoia attached by persons carrying out such dangerous jobs such as a coal miner or a steeplejack. The inspector did not agree with Simon Woods' statement about the difficulty in tracing persons back from 1888. Of course I reminded him that the police had not produced any evidence to challenge this statement.

This officer like all the other police witnesses before him in my opinion over exaggerated the fears and concerns of the police and this was confirmed by this witness who gave an example of tracing persons back and harm subsequently befalling living descendants. He raised the issue of Judas Iscariot from the Bible stating that if anyone could trace his bloodline back then any living relatives may come to harm. By making this ridiculous statement I hoped by this point it would now become clear to the tribunal that the police were totally over exaggerating their concerns in what I saw was a deliberate attempt to mislead them.

I should mention that this officer was the first witness on the final day and it soon became apparent during my cross-examination of him that overnight he may well have spoken to Supt. McKinney about what questions I had asked him in cross-examination. At times when I put specific questions to this officer, he was coming back with not only the answer to that question but adding to his answer by referring to other matters which I had not yet questioned him about, matters he could only have ascertained from Supt. McKinney's testimony.

On the morning of May 12th all of the witness testimony concluded and the afternoon was taken up with all parties making their final submissions to the tribunal. Following this the judge announced that the decision of the tribunal would be formally announced within two-three weeks.

I left the hearing still quietly confident that I had presented a strong enough case to persuade the tribunal to rule in my favour and allow my appeal, but time would tell, it would be a long three weeks. I have to say that when I left the court for a time it felt like a big weight had been lifted from me. I had spent the past three years putting this case together. Without a doubt the biggest challenge I have ever had to endure. The last few months had been a mental and physical strain on me.

CHAPTER 14

THE TRIBUNAL'S DECISION

The three weeks waiting for the tribunal's decision stretched to six weeks and then the day of reckoning came on July 4th. I received the decision notice which indicated I had lost the appeal, this was a bitter pill to swallow, the tribunal had accepted the police evidence that:

The entries in both the register and the ledgers could not be distinguished from those that related to informants and those that did not.

The entries relating to informants if released could likely cause harm to come to any living relatives or descendant of those named.

Although disappointed I knew that all had not been in vain as I now had the names of new suspects who had never before come to notice. In addition to the police file showing the extra police patrols in Whitechapel long after the Kelly murder, which was thought to have been the last.

Over the next weeks I went over the decision notice looking to find an error in law to which I could appeal. I did find what I believed to be one, which revolved around Section 30 (2) (a)(b). I then sought further advice from a leading expert on the Freedom of Information legislation, Maurice Frankel who heads an organisation called "*The Campaign for Freedom of Information"*. He also believed that there was an error in law by the tribunal in arriving at their decision. This specific section and subsection from the Act states:

"The exemption in section 30(2) is as follows:
Information held by a public authority is exempt information if—
(a) It was obtained or recorded by the authority for the purposes of its functions relating to—
(i) Investigations falling within subsection (1) (a) or (b),
(ii) Criminal proceedings which the authority has power to conduct,

(iii) Investigations (other than investigations falling within subsection (1) (a) or (b)) which are conducted by the authority for any of the purposes

specified in section 31(2) and either by virtue of Her Majesty's prerogative or by virtue of powers conferred by or under any enactment, or
(iv) Civil proceedings which are brought by or on behalf of the authority and arise out of such investigations, **"and"**
(b) It relates to the obtaining of information from confidential sources."

For this total exemption to be met, both paragraphs (a) and (b) of the definition **"**have**"** to be satisfied. First, the information must relate to one of the types of investigations or proceedings mentioned in section 30(2) (a). Second, the information must relate to the obtaining of information from confidential sources - i.e. paragraph (b) must also be satisfied.

The requirement that both (a) and (b) must be satisfied is clear from the word **"and"** which appears at the end of 30(2) (a)

In paragraph 20 of the tribunals decision notice the tribunal states: "*...although we acknowledge that the opening phrase "it relates to" has a broad meaning we find it difficult to be sure that all of the disputed information can be said to relate to the obtaining of information from confidential sources."*

That paragraph indicates that the tribunal had reservations about whether section 30(2) (b) was totally satisfied.

In Paragraph 21 of the decision notice, the tribunal states:

"We are accordingly satisfied that at least section 30(2)(a) is engaged and therefore proceed to consider the public interest balance under section 2(2)(b)."

The tribunal have decided that the exemption applies because section 30(2) (a) alone is satisfied. But that is not enough. For the total exemption to apply section 30(2) (b) must **"also"** be satisfied, and the tribunal clearly haven't found that it is.

Therefore in the absence of the engagement of Section 30(2) in its entirety the tribunal should not have proceeded to make a decision on the public interest factor.

I therefore believed that there had been an error of law by the tribunal and I therefore was going to appeal to the Upper tier Tribunal to have the

decision notice set aside and my appeal be allowed.

I subsequently lodged an appeal on the point of law issue. However, the appeal notice had to go first to the original tribunal judge who reviewed the appeal notice and agreed that there had been an error in law with the tribunal decision notice.

However, he ruled that the error in the decision notice was only in relation to the wording and did not affect the decision of the tribunal members. He therefore simply amended the wording of the decision notice, which under the legislation he was entitled to do. This effectively ruled out any further hope I had for overturning the original tribunal's decision and gaining full access to the register and ledgers.

In a final attempt to gain access to these records I made a direct written appeal to the newly appointed Metropolitan Police Commissioner Sir Bernard Hogan-Howe. However, he did not even have the courtesy to acknowledge my letter or to even take the time to reply.

I then made a direct appeal to the Prime Minister David Cameron, only to receive a written reply from a correspondence officer at 10, Downing Street saying that the prime minister is not in a position to read all mail sent to him and my letter had therefore not been read by him. The reply stated that my initial correspondence had been forwarded to the Home Office.

I later received a reply from the Home Office, again from what appeared to be another correspondence department within the Home Office. The letter stated that, "*Ministers could not intervene in this matter as to do so would undermine the principle that the police are entirely independent of the government*". Clearly my letters and accompanying documents had been not read by the Home Secretary or anyone else at the Home Office or within any other ministerial office.

I can only hope that at some point in future years these records will be made public, but I fear that they will be destroyed if they haven't been already.

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

NEW SUSPECTS FROM THE REGISTER

Now I was in possession of the names of new suspects from the register I set about the task of trying to assess and evaluate the suspicions that fell upon them. The first I looked at was William McGrath and the address of 57, Bedford Gardens.

I believe this is the Bedford Gardens, which was in Kensington, West London. Census records for this address show that this address in 1888 was occupied by a number of painters, and sculptors who had their studios there. One of these was a William Magrath who was a painter. The only difference is the spelling of the surname in the census record. However, I would suggest that it is most probably the same person referred to in the register. So what is known about William Magrath and what was there about him, which brought him to the notice of Special Branch officers and the suspicion he was connected to the Whitechapel murders?

Magrath was born on the 20th of March 1838 at Cork, Ireland. He attended the Cork School of Art and immigrated to the United States in 1855. He took up residence in Albany, New York state, and later had a studio in New York City from 1868. He became a member of the American Society of painters in watercolours from 1868 and was elected an associate member of the National Academy in 1873 and an academician in 1876. He was famous for painting Irish landscapes.

In 1879 he moved to England. At the time of the 1881 census he was living in the household of Georgina West at 135, Gower Street. In 1883 his address was given as care of Charles Booth, 98, Gower Street. He exhibited three works at the Cork Industrial and Fine Art exhibition of 1883. In the same year he returned to the USA and established a studio in Washington, DC. He was naturalised as a citizen of the USA on the 3rd of June 1886.

It is known he visited England and Ireland for a six-month period in the summer of 1888. His exact whereabouts at the time of the murders are not known. What is known is that he in fact left England on the 22nd of December 1888 for New York. In 1889 he moved from Washington back to

New York City. In June 1890 he again left the USA travelling back to County Cork in Ireland. The following two years he spent travelling back and forth between England and Ireland. On the 26th of April 1892 he applied for a passport at the American Legation in London describing himself as temporarily resident at 115, Gower Street, London stating he intended to return to the USA within one year. It is believed he returned back to the USA in November 1893.

Between 1908 and 1910 he was living in New York City. Sometime thereafter he returned back to the United Kingdom. Records show he was in the United Kingdom in 1915 and also in 1918. He died on the 13th of February 1918 at 19, Park Road, Harlesden, London.

In 1892, his description was given as follows:

Age: 54 years
Stature: 5 feet, 8 inches
Forehead: high
Eyes: blue
Nose: prominent
Mouth: moustache
Chin: bearded
Hair: brown
Complexion: fair
Face: oval

It is not known how he looked in 1888. However, a self-portrait he painted in 1873 also shows him with a full beard and a moustache. So it is likely he retained his beard throughout most of his life. It should be noted that no one with a full beard was ever seen at any of the murder locations or in company with any of the victims prior to their deaths.

At this time there is no evidence to show why he came under suspicion. Had I been able to examine the register and ledgers in more detail I might have been able to ascertain why he was named.

However, it is interesting that we now have a new suspect named in official police records who is a painter, this now takes us back to Les XX, could he have been connected to that group, was he an anarchist? Or was it that he was mentioned because he was of Irish descent and therefore may

have had a link with the Fenians and the suspicion that fell on them for having some involvement in the Whitechapel murders? However, in the light of one theory that Mary Kelly's murder may not have been carried out by Jack the Ripper, but by the Fenians it would be wrong to totally dismiss Magrath outright.

The full details of the remaining entries are as follows:

Chief Inspector Littlechild's entry read, "*Suspect O'Brien & The Whitechapel Murders*"

The entry under Jack the Ripper read, "*The name given to Wilson at Bushmills*"

Having just surnames did not make enquiries into these two new suspects easy. I will first discuss the suspect named Wilson. Firstly Bushmills could be the small town of Bushmills in Co. Antrim, Ireland famous for whiskey making.

The only reference to a Wilson I could come across with any relevance to Jack the Ripper was with regards to an article which appeared in The Irish Times newspaper dated Wednesday November 28th 1888. The article read:

"To-day, shortly after 12 o'clock, a man was pursued by a crowd through Royal Avenue, and as many persons called "Jack the Ripper," the excitement became intense. The individual turned at the Free Library and ran up Little Donegall Street. In addition to the increasing crowd, the police were now on his track as well. Scores of people from Union Street, Charles Street, Stephen Street, and Birch Street, joined in the pursuit. It was feared that the supposed "Jack" would bolt down Birch Street and escape perchance through some familiar and mysterious haunt. These fears were but too well founded, though the fact that the visitor being called "Jack the Ripper" did not dispose the inhabitants to harbour him. "Jack" gained Carrick Hill without being captured, and he rushed into the first door on turning the corner. Here it seems he frightened some children, and when the police arrived every facility was given them to enter. Constables Britten and M'Guirk went through the premises and ultimately found the so-called "Jack" secreted in a cellar between Carrick Hill and Birch Street. The constables placed the man under arrest and conveyed him to the police office. As he was taken down Donegall Street the crowd was still further

augmented, and the cry of "Jack the Ripper" was kept up. When taken to the police office the crowd which, were obliged to remain outside, gave vent to their feelings in frequent outbursts of cheering. It was discovered that the defendant was wearing two hats - a soft hat being inside a felt one - and carried two walking sticks. He gave his name as James Wilson, and appeared to be about 43 years of age. When asked his occupation he said, "I am a comedian," which was interpreted by the sergeant in charge as meaning "a ballad singer." He stated that he had been on a tour through some of the provincial towns, and had called at Lisburn and several places in County Antrim. The charge entered against him was that of "indecent behaviour," but there can be no doubt that he was arrested more for his own safety than for any breach of the peace which he had committed."

It says in the article that he had been to County Antrim and of course as previously stated Bushmills is in County Antrim. But other than that there is nothing more known about the James Wilson mentioned or any other Wilson. Sadly the files relative to this entry appear to have now gone. They would have been most informative. I would have imagined details of the above incident would have found its way to London and could have been made the subject of a police report and perhaps the one referred to here.

If I thought the first entry was difficult the second entry from Littlechild would prove to be an almost impossible task. The first major problem was only having a surname and nothing else to work with, secondly the name O'Brien is another common Irish name.

The only name I could connect having regard to all the various murder scenarios previously discussed was a William O'Brien B. 1852 at Bank Place in Mallow, County Cork.

From an early age O'Brien's political ideas, like most of his contemporaries, were shaped by the Fenian movement and the plight of the Irish tenant farmers, his elder brother having participated in the rebellion of 1867. It resulted in O'Brien himself becoming actively involved with the Fenian brotherhood, purportedly resigning in the mid-1870s, but still taking an active role in political issues, which resulted in him being arrested and imprisoned on many occasions.

In 1887 O'Brien helped to organize a rent strike during the Plan of Campaign at the estate of Lady Kingston near Mitchelstown, County Cork. On 9th September an 8,000-strong demonstration resulted in three estate tenants being shot dead, and others wounded, by police at the town's courthouse where O'Brien had been brought for trial on charges of incitement. This event became known as the Mitchelstown Massacre. Later that year, thousands of demonstrators marched in London to demand his release from prison, and clashed with police at Trafalgar Square on Bloody Sunday (November 10th).

Following his release from prison he then became a Member of Parliament but was still believed to be connected to the Fenian movement retiring in 1895. For many years thereafter he campaigned for social reform.

O’Brien was also involved in the early 20th century with the newly formed Sinn Fein which in the 1970s became the political arm of the IRA. He died suddenly on 25th February 1928 while on a visit to London with his wife at the age of 75.

So is this the man referred to in the register? Well he most certainly would have come to the notice of both Jenkinson up until 1887 and then by Special Branch after that. I don’t think for one minute that if this is the same man he would have been responsible for the actual murders. He was a very high profile individual and the police would have no doubt been keeping him under surveillance each time he was in this country simply because he did have Fenian connections and was probably looked upon as part of their political arm.

In concluding it’s strange that it seems that some of the more recent enquires into the case keeps bringing us back to the Fenians. On a final note in a book titled “*The Rise of Scotland Yard”* written by Douglas Browne. There is an entry in the book whereby Browne states from documents he viewed, Sir Melville Macnaghten believed that Jack the Ripper was the leader of a plot to assassinate Arthur Balfour the Chief Secretary for Ireland in 1887/88. It’s a coincidence that Balfour was at one time instrumental in the imprisonment of O’Brien.

Macnaghten could not have been privy to all of this information at the time as he was not in office at that time. He joined the Metropolitan Police

in 1889, so he must have read if from another source. Having regards to the discrepancies in his now much mentioned memorandum from 1894, extreme caution should be heeded when assessing the truthfulness and accuracy of anything Macnaghten was associated with.

One positive note to come out of the new disclosure and Littlechild's entry is the fact he does not mention Tumblety despite suggesting in later years that he was his prime suspect. From what I have seen there does not appear to be any other Littlechild entries relating to the Whitechapel murders in the register. On that basis I would suggest serious consideration be given to removing Tumblety from any further suspicion of being involved in the murders.

In the interim period as a result of information provided to me by a third party I was led to believe that the register also contained another entry appertaining to the Whitechapel murders. This was a named entry under the name R. Churchill and the entry read, "*Perpetrator of The Whitechapel Murders"*. It was suggested to me that this entry could relate to Randolph Churchill the father of Sir Winston Churchill.

I knew that his name had been mentioned before in Ripper circles, and his name appears in a Ripper book titled "*The Celebrity Suspects"* written by Mike Holgate.

Randolph Henry Spencer Churchill was born 13th February 1849 which would have made him 39 at the time of the murders. He was born to be a politician representing several constituencies in the House of Commons between 1874 and 1885.

Under Prime Minister Lord Salisbury he then became secretary of state for India a post which lasted 12 months. He was then appointed Chancellor of the Exchequer and Leader of the House of Commons. An appointment Queen Victoria opposed describing him as, *"So mad and odd"*.

Throughout his political career he was disliked and made many enemies even among his own close associates describing him as, "*rude and offensive"*. He had a reputation for being a good orator in the House of Commons and the cry would go out, "*Randy's up"*, and the chamber would quickly fill. His speeches were described as often controversial, but always brilliant.

He resigned as Chancellor in 1886, thinking his resignation would not be accepted by Lord Salisbury, it was, and he spent the last eight years of his life in the political wilderness. He remained in the House of Commons but seemed a spent force; somehow his speeches had lost their effectiveness.

He later contracted syphilis where and when it is not known, however this brought on general paralysis and he died on January 24th 1895 at the age of 45.

Churchill's modern-day link to Jack the Ripper revolves around him supposedly being the highest Freemason in the country and was therefore part of what is described by several modern-day authors as the Royal Conspiracy, which I have previously documented. Despite what the authors suggest they have not been able to prove Churchill was ever connected to the masons. However, given his high government positions over the years I would suggest that he probably was a mason.

Churchill is also said to fit the detailed description given by the witness George Hutchinson of a man seen with Mary Kelly shortly before she was murdered. The Pall Mall Gazette June 28th 1884 described Churchill as, "*Of average height with a wide turned up moustache, beautifully dressed, his gold chain has the solid appearance of real 18 carat"*.

Churchill was a high profile member of society in 1888. He would have been easily recognizable and I doubt for one minute would have risked walking the streets of Whitechapel. If there were any truth as to his involvement then it would have been in a non-active capacity. I personally have never subscribed to the Royal Conspiracy theory, or any suggestion that the murders were the work of the Freemasons.

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

THE POLICE OFFICIALS IN LATER YEARS

For 125 years Ripper researchers and the general public at large have subscribed to the theory that the police did in fact know the identity of the killer, I do not agree and have set out below the details and quotes made by senior police officers involved in the investigation at varying times after the murders ceased which corroborate my belief:

October 23rd 1888

Sir Robert Anderson, Ass. Comm, Met Police said:

"But that five successive murders should have been committed, without our having the slightest clue of any kind is extraordinary, if not unique, in the annals of crime."

November 4th 1889

Sir Robert Anderson in the Pall Mall Gazette in an interview with American journalist:

"Our *failure to find Jack the Ripper as they call him."*

This is the same Sir Robert Anderson who in his book published in 1910 and up until that time had stated on many occasions he knew the identity of the Ripper but didn't name him.

November 1890

James Monro following his resignation as Metropolitan Police Commissioner, November 1890 stated:

"The police had nothing positive in the way of clues about the identity of the Ripper."

February 15th 1891

Significantly, in the Lloyds Weekly News of February 15th 1891, Sir Edward Bradford, by this time, the Metropolitan Police Commissioner, felt

convinced from evidence of previous murders in Whitechapel that the murdered woman (Coles) was a victim of the same killer responsible for the Ripper murders two years previously.

If there had already been a previous positive identification (Kosminski), why would Bradford, who would surely have known about it, have thought the Ripper to be still at large?

In 1891, after the murder of Frances Coles on 13th February that year, the police believed that they had found the Ripper in Thomas Sadler. However, he was found not to be Coles' killer, and he faded into obscurity. At this time the Ripper still had not been found.

May 1892

In Cassell's Saturday Journal Chief Inspector Abberline is quoted:

"Theories! We were lost almost in theories; there were so many of them."

June 1892

Sir Robert Anderson in Cassell's Saturday Journal, 1892 stated:

"The mention of this appalling sequence of still undiscovered crimes."

February 1893

Eastern Post and Daily Chronicle, Superintendent Thomas Arnold said:

"We had some of the finest men from all parts of London, but all their efforts were useless."

May 1895

In 1895 following a non-fatal attack on another prostitute in Whitechapel the police arrested a William Grant Grainger. The police including Swanson believed that Grainger was the Ripper. Nothing was found to connect him with being Jack the Ripper. This clearly shows that the police were still trying to find Jack the Ripper and had no clues as to his identity even as late as 1895.

At that time Swanson who led the Ripper investigation when interviewed by the Pall Mall Gazette at this time however stated:

“The Whitechapel Murders were the work of a man who is now dead.”

So this in itself must eliminate Aaron Kosminski as he was institutionalized at that time and he didn’t die until 1919.

March 1903

Chief Inspector Abberline now retired and living in Bournemouth said to the Pall Mall Gazette:

“We have never believed all those stories about Jack the Ripper being dead, or that he was a lunatic, or anything of that kind.”

September 1908

Speaking retrospectively to the Daily Chronicle Sir Robert Anderson said:

“I *told Sir William Harcourt that I could not accept the responsibility for the non-detection of the author of the Ripper crimes.”*

April 23rd 1910

Detective Inspector Reid speaking in Lloyds Weekly:

“ Now we have Sir Robert Anderson saying that Jack the Ripper was a Jew, that I challenge him to prove, and what is more it was never suggested at the time of the murders. I challenge anyone to prove that there was a tittle of evidence against man, woman or child in connection with the murders, as no man was ever seen in the company of the women who were found dead.”

February 4th 1912

Detective Inspector Reid speaking again in Lloyds Weekly:

“I challenge anyone to produce a tittle of evidence of any kind against anyone. The earth has been raked over, and the seas have been swept, to find this criminal 'Jack the Ripper’, always without success. It still amuses me to read the writings of such men as Dr. Anderson, Dr. Forbes Winslow, Major Arthur. Griffiths, and many others, all holding different theories, but all of them wrong. I have answered many of them in print, and would only add here that I was on the scene and ought to know.”

1914

Sir Melville Macnaghten author of the now questionable Macnaghten Memorandum written in 1894, wrote in his 1914 book titled "*Days of my years"*:

"No light was vouchsafed to us, and after two or three weeks it seemed as if the Muswell Hill murder was going to climb on the shelf of undiscovered crimes alongside Jack the Ripper and the Cafe Royal case of eighteen months before."

Unless every single comment made by all the above high-ranking police officers who were all actively involved in the investigation is a lie, (Anderson, Abberline, Swanson, Monro, Moore, and Reid) no person was known to have committed the Whitechapel murders, or for that matter no one was ever regarded as a prime suspect, and all of the murders remain to this day unsolved.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

125TH ANNIVERSARY TOUR

2013 would be the 125th anniversary of the Whitechapel murders, the year perhaps when the final pieces of the jigsaw would emerge. Would Ripper researchers who have perhaps been sitting on important documents all of these years finally decided to release them into the public domain? Were there even any important documents still in existence, which had previously not seen the light of day?

At the conclusion of my long and protracted cold case reinvestigation into this mystery, the results of which in my opinion have now dispelled many of the previously accepted facts surrounding this mystery, and to commemorate the 125th anniversary I decided to put together a two hour one-man theatre show titled, "*Jack the Ripper - A 21st Century Investigation*".

This would be the opportunity for me to travel the length and the breadth of the country disclosing the results of my investigation to the many people still fascinated by this mystery. The format was simple, by means of Microsoft PowerPoint I put together an audio visual show, which contained 120 slides consisting of photographs of the victims, and suspects, as well as the more recent photographs taken when carrying out the mortuary tests to prove or disprove the organ removal theory.

With the help of a concert promoter Johnny Mans we were able to secure 70 theatre dates which in itself showed that theatre managers were prepared to stage a show in total contrast to the normal theatre shows of music and comedy.

Overall the show was well received. In my introduction at the beginning of this book I stated that the public had been misled by the total distortion of the facts by the press and media over the years. That soon became apparent with my nightly questions to the audience. The first being how they perceived Jack the Ripper to have looked in 1888? At this point I would show the audience a picture of a man in a tall black hat, wearing a

long black cape and carrying a black bag. A picture which has appeared on many Ripper books and has also featured in many Ripper documentaries, an image falsely created as someone dressed in that way would certainly not have been trawling the backstreets of Whitechapel at four in the morning. Almost every night at least 50% of the audience put their hands up in the belief that this was how they perceived the killer to have looked.

Another nightly audience survey revolved around suspects. Each night I would ask the audience to reveal to me the names of their preferred suspects. The first thing I noticed was that night after night the same names were put forward, these being Francis Tumblety, Aaron Kosminski, the Royal Prince, Sir William Gull, Walter Sickert, George Chapman.

All of these have been the subject of many television documentaries and recently published books. My follow-on question to the audience related to how they had come to suspect these various suspect's names that they were suggesting. Each person answered in the same way, as a result of a television documentary or as a result of what they had read.

Another interesting survey during the show was to try to find out how deep the public had really gone into studying this mystery themselves, or was their knowledge gained simply from television documentaries or reading books. In an attempt to answer this when discussing the apron piece and the suggestion that the killer cut or tore this from the apron Eddowes was wearing I asked how many believed this explanation.

The results of this night after night were staggering only one or two members of each nightly audience agreed with this explanation. The results of a follow-up question confirmed that the public had generally not researched this part of the mystery in any great detail. It should be noted that hardly any of the television documentaries have expanded upon this issue. So again it goes to show that although the general public has a passing interest in this mystery in my opinion they still have been misled by what they have seen and read.

I did hope that by taking this show nationwide I might find someone who had a family member or relative from Whitechapel in 1888 who might come forward one night and offer up new important documentation or information on the case, or perhaps disclose to me a story handed down

from Whitechapel in 1888. I was pleasantly surprised as many people after the shows around the country came forward and volunteered stories from 1888 on the case.

In Essex a woman came forward stating she was a distant relative of Charles Cross one of the two men who found the body of Mary Nichols. She firmly believed that he was in fact her killer and ultimately was Jack the Ripper.

In Birmingham an elderly male told a story that he had many years previous worked with a Jewish man whose relatives lived and worked in Whitechapel at the time of the murders. The story told to him was that the work colleagues had told him that the Jewish community in Whitechapel identified the killer as one of their own, a young Jewish butcher. In order for this not to come to the notice of the police thereby bringing shame and likely retribution on all the Jews living in and around Whitechapel certain high-ranking Jewish members of the community had the offender killed and with the help of a doctor and a rabbi made the death out to have been by natural causes so as not arouse any police suspicion.

On the Isle of Man another interesting story emerged from a middle-aged woman. This was interesting because I had never heard this mentioned before. She told the story that her great, great-grandmother was walking home with several other women the night of the Stride murder in Berner Street, and they heard all the commotion following the discovery of the body. They looked up and saw a male shinning across the rooftops. This is an interesting story because it is believed that the killer was disturbed carrying out this murder and therefore could have made his quick and hasty getaway down to the bottom of Dutfield’s Yard and up and across the rooftops.

Prior to appearing in Derby with the show I received and email from a lady who had only recently found out that she was the great, great-granddaughter of George Chapman the suspect suggested by Inspector Abberline. Since this find she was anxious to know if there was any foundation to the suspicions. I wrote back telling her that in my opinion his viability as to being a prime suspect is poorly deserved. She did indicate that she would be attending the show and I invited her to meet with me following the show.

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

EPILOGUE

So now the mystery surrounding Jack the Ripper has been thrown wide open. He singularly has for over 125 years according to some has been credited with the killing of only five prostitutes in Whitechapel, this may not now be the case as my investigation has cast a doubt about all of these five murders being committed by the same person, as well as the earlier murder of Martha Tabram and the later murders of McKenzie and Coles who have been suggested as being Ripper victims. So it is quite feasible there could have been different killers involved in the commission of these murders in Whitechapel with none of them acting together in a joint enterprise.

My investigation uncovered a total of 17 unsolved Ripper-like murders, which occurred between 1863 and 1894 not only in London but also in Germany and the USA. I have previously suggested that a German merchant seaman Carl Feigenbaum now identified as Anton Zahn could have been responsible for one, some, or all of these murders. My view on that has not changed. If he had killed on several different continents then he would be looked upon as the world's first transcontinental serial killer.

So that still leaves unanswered questions. Was there such a person as Jack the Ripper or was he just a myth? The results of my long and protracted investigation tell me that there was no singular Jack the Ripper and that in fact he was nothing more than a myth. The police seldom referred to the killer as Jack the Ripper choosing to refer to the killer as The Whitechapel Murderer. However in my opinion, there is clearly a case to suggest that at least three of the victims Chapman, Nichols and Eddowes were killed by the same hand in Ripper-like fashion.

As I have previously stated the name Jack the Ripper was believed to have been created by a member of the press by the name of Thomas Bulling. During the murders a letter was sent to the Central News Agency Office purporting to be from the killer, it was signed Jack the Ripper. It has become known as "The Dear Boss" letter.

The letter was dated September 25th 1888 and was received at the press offices on September 27th 1888. Bulling was also believed to have written the "*Saucy Jack*" postcard also sent to the Central News Agency on October 1st 1888 and also signed Jack the Ripper. The handwriting on both has many similar characteristics and is strikingly similar to the handwriting of Bulling, which I have looked at in correspondence Bulling wrote in the normal course of his daily press work in 1888.

From that day on the myth was created and has to this day resulted in all of the Whitechapel murders being attributed to the same killer, whether the police looked upon them in the same light we may never fully know. If we were to remove the name of Jack the Ripper from the investigation and the long-standing theory that he removed organs from some of the victims at the crime scene, and the belief that he killed all of the victims what remains? The answer is nothing more than a series of similar unsolved murders all of which bear some similarities to each other, which had it not been for those three main aspects of this case which has been keeping the myth alive all would have drifted into total obscurity.

The search to obtain the truth still goes on however the passage of time has not been kind to my 21st century investigation in relation to all of these murders, which occurred 125 years ago. However, I remain the ever-eternal optimist that one day new evidence may come to light to finally close a murder case which has and still does to this very day fascinate people worldwide.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

The Marquess of Salisbury

Pamela Clark-Royal Archives Windsor Castle

Robin Harcourt-Williams-Chief Archivist, Hatfield House

Michael Barrett

D. P. Hardy & Co.

Patricia Cornwell

The Times Newspaper

The Daily Telegraph Newspaper

The Metropolitan Police Force

The City of London Police Force

The National Maritime Museum

The Marine Institute Newfoundland

The Guildhall Library, City of London

The Docklands Museum London

The Bremen State Archives

Sing Sing Correctional Facility

ITN Productions London

National Geographical Society

ZDF Television Germany

The Museum of Life London

Simon Wood

Phil Carter

Maggy Ann Steel

Fiona Saint

Dr. Ian Calder

Mr. Edward Neale

Phillip Harrison

Paul Langford

William A. Mays

Sarah Minney

Dr. Lindsay Clutterbuck

Debra Arif

Andrew Firth

Jane Coram

Table of Contents

Chapter 1
Introduction
Chapter 2
Whitechapel 1888
Chapter 3
The Victims
Chapter 4
The Suspects
Chapter 5
The Aberconway Version
Chapter 6
The Swanson Marginalia
Chapter 7
Carl Feigenbaum
Chapter 8
The Medical Experts
Chapter 9
The Anarchist Theory
Chapter 10
The Secret Police Files
Chapter 11
Freedom of Information Hearing Part 1
Chapter 12
Informants
Chapter 13
Freedom of Information Hearing Part 2
Chapter 14
The Information Tribunal Decision
Chapter 15
New Suspects from the Register
Chapter 16
Police Officials in Later Years
Chapter 17
125 th Anniversary Tour

th
Chapter 18
The Epilogue

Table of Contents

Chapter 1
Introduction
Chapter 2
Whitechapel 1888
Chapter 3
The Victims
Chapter 4
The Suspects
Chapter 5
The Aberconway Version
Chapter 6
The Swanson Marginalia
Chapter 7
Carl Feigenbaum
Chapter 8
The Medical Experts
Chapter 9
The Anarchist Theory
Chapter 10
The Secret Police Files
Chapter 11
Freedom of Information Hearing Part 1
Chapter 12
Informants
Chapter 13
Freedom of Information Hearing Part 2
Chapter 14
The Information Tribunal Decision
Chapter 15
New Suspects from the Register
Chapter 16
Police Officials in Later Years
Chapter 17
125 th Anniversary Tour

th
Chapter 18
The Epilogue